



Wild Assassin by Lisbeth Tshithlo

**For more African books PDF Free Download please visit
<https://novelsguru.com/>**

1

(Tripping for danger...)

Shadow's pov

“ Sullivan check the car very well and make sure there's no any tracker there” I said and he bow then walk away

I stood and watch as he check the car thoroughly and I glance around, soon he came back holding a tracker

“ Vinci I found this” he said and drop the tracker on my palm

“ He think he's smart, put that tracker in his car” I said and he nod, he put the tracker in his car and we enter my car

Sullivan drive out of the compound and I rest my back then close my eyes

“ Did something happen between you and Garam?” Sullivan asked and I open my eyes

“ Intercourse, I did it to satisfy her urge and it's never gonna repeat itself” I said and glance at him

“ That was why she's acting weird” Sullivan said

“ I did it to satisfy her desires and now she will think something is attached to it” I said

“ Make it clear to her”

Shortly, we arrive at the Mansion and I get down from the car taking off the blazer and tie, I enter the house and I saw Haeun standing as she held Garam leg for support

“ Can she walk??” Sullivan asked

“ She can only stand but she can't walk” Garam replied and I stare at Haeun

She smiled brightly as fell on her knees then crawl to my side, she held my leg as she try to stand

“ Don't stress yourself” I said as I carry her and she smiled

“ Baby have you eaten?” I asked and she smiled then pointed at her bottle water that's on the table

“ She needs water” Sullivan said and Garam pass her bottle water to me

I gently put it in her mouth and she feast on it, holding the bottle water herself.

“ Sullivan take care of her, I need to do something upstairs” I said as I drop Haeun on the couch then went upstairs, I went to my room

I enter my room then take off my clothes, I throw the tie and blazer on the bed as I enter the bathroom

The cold water hit my skin and I smiled, I bath quickly then come out from the bathroom tying a white towel round my waist

A smirk appear on my face when I saw Garam on my bed giving me that seductive smile.

“ What do you want?” I said coldly

“ Now you are back to your cold attitude” she replied and I walk away, I dress ignoring her presence

I wear a black top then glance at her “ What do you want??”

“ Vinci are you really asking me that question, why are suddenly cold towards me, I thought we had a nice time together yesterday” she said and I rolled my eyeballs

“ Garam I already told you, the bullshit that happened yesterday was nothing, no string attached to it”

“ Oh really, don't tell me you don't the s€x you are calling bullshit” she said

I take the gun that's under the bed and point it at her, targeting her forehead

“ Say one more irrelevant thing and I'm gonna shoot you”

“ Vinci....” she called

“ Leave my room right now” I said and she hurried out, I drop the gun down then keep it in my short pocket

I sigh as I bite my lip then look away, “ I swear Kim I hate you” I cursed beneath my breath, I slowly open my eyes then step out.

Juran pov

“ Father good morning” I greeted as I enter his room fully and he smiled

“ Juran my second priority” he said and I chuckled

“ Dad since I'm the second priority then who's the first??

“ Swan of course” he replied

“ Dad I'm older than her”

“ But she's still my favorite, you all know that” he said and I scoff

“ Are you really gonna open a company for her?”

“ Of course, the company is ready and I'm gonna launch it next week” he replied.

“ Okay Dad if you are opening a company for her, what about me??”

“ Juran you are gonna work under her” he replied and I scoff

“ Dad are you serious??? I'm older than her”

“ Juran....” he called

“ She's the only one that have access to your bank accounts, dad this is not fair”

“ Juran if you don't wanna work under her, it's fine but know something,,,, I'm gonna cut your allowance” he said and I widened my eyes

“ Father!!!”

“ Accept it or leave it” he said and I walk out on me

This is getting too much I can't take this anyone

Swan here, Swan this, her names are everywhere, is she the only one on earth

I went to my Mom's room and I met her receiving a phone call, she smiled at her

“ Okay send your details to me, I want the job done as soon as possible” she said and cut the call

“ Mom can you imagine the bullshit Dad is saying”

“ What did he say?” she asked

“ He said I should work under Swan or else he's gonna cut my allowance” I replied and she smiled

“ Baby you are not gonna work under her so don't worry, this will be over soon” she said

“ Mom when??? I wanna be in the spotlight”

“ Juran my baby, don't worry all this will be over soon” she said

“ What are you planning?”

“ Juran the assassin you saw earlier, I stole his number from your Dad's phone and I called him and he said to eliminate Swan I have to pay 50 million won” she said

“ Mom what are you waiting for???, Give him the money”

“ Juran I doubt if he's gonna do the job the way we want it” she said and I breath out nodding my head

“ This guy is an assassin like you said earlier and I did a little bit research on him, Mom this Shadow is gonna do the job properly the way we want it”

“ I will make the transaction now” she brought out her phone and I watch as she did the transaction then call the Shadow line She put the phone on speaker and I heard a deep voice, a bass voice

“ Kim Karina have seen it, consider the job done” the voice said and the call ended

“ Mom???”

“ Juran that's how his voice is so don't worry you are not gonna work under her, not when I'm alive” she said and I nod

“ Thank you”

“ Where's she??”

“ Probably in her room with her annoying personal maid” I replied and my mom smiled

“ Baby don't worry, go and have fun everything will be fine” she said

“ Mom I'm trusting you on this”

“ Juran go and have fun, spend your money lavishly cause it can never finish, you will not need any permission before you withdraw any money” she said and I smiled.

“ Momma thanks for support” I said as I kiss her cheek then stroll out, I step out of her room then I saw a maid passing by

“ Get me whiskey with a glass cup, bring it to my room” I said and she bow then walk

Advertisement

I turn around then went to my room

Swan pov

We entered the kitchen and Beaver brought out a bottle water, I open it then sip a little

“ Thank you” I said

“ Swan let's go back to the sitting room” she said and I chuckled

“ Why?? I wanna talk to you”

“ Can you be fast about it so we can go back to the sitting room” she said

“ What's wrong why are you rushing??”

“ Nothing just talk” she replied as she tamped her foot on the floor repeatedly

“ Aldo is cheating on me again, he keeps hurting everytime”

“ Really??? If he keeps hurting you Swan I will advise you to break up with him” she said

“ Beaver you know that's not possible, you know I love him”

“ Do you wanna get married to a cheat” she said

“ The marriage is next week and I can't cut it off, what will I tell my father and family, it's gonna be a big shame on my family” I said

“ Okay then marry him and if he keeps cheating on you, just don't complain” she said

“ Beaver...”

“ Let's go back to the sitting room” she said and walk away and I followed her

I came out from the kitchen with Beaver and I saw Yiga sitting on the sofa

“ Yiga do you need anything?” I asked and she glance at Beaver

“ No I'm good, Swan your father wants to see you and remember there's a presentation going on in your fashion company” she said and I made the O sound

“ Oh yeah that's right, I totally forgot” I said smiling as I glance at Beaver then glance at Yiga

“ Ma'am let's go” she said and I nod

“ Beaver let's talk later, I will call you” I said and stroll out with Yiga

We enter the car and the driver drive out of the compound

“ Is my father really eager to see me?”

“ Not really cause I told him you are busy” she replied

“ Tell them not to start the presentation yet, I will pick the best student myself” I said and she nod

“ Swan what are you gonna do about Aldo?” she asked

“ Nothing, I will go on with the marriage” I replied

“ Even tho he might be cheating on you” she said and I nod

“ I can't call it off cause we have gone far already”

“ But Swan.....”

“ Yiga let's skip this topic” I said cutting her off and she nod

The driver drive inside the company and I wait for him to park the car properly before getting down

I enter the company with Yiga, my employees bow for me and I smiled at them, I went to presentation room and I saw no one there

“ Yiga tell them I'm around” I said

“ Yes ma'am” she said and walk away

I went to sit on the chair and stare at the notepad and pen that's in front of me

“ Wait is this??” I wondered as I stare at the notepad and I saw some names on it

Who are these people??, I heard voices and I tilt my head to see Yiga coming in with Kiara

“ Ma'am you're here” Kiara said and I nod.

“ Where are the student?” I asked

“ On their way” she replied and I look away, I could feel people's presence beside and I turn to my left only to see the seat empty

“ Yiga...” I called and she appear at my front

“ Sit beside me” I said and the trainers stare at me

“ Ma'am...”.

“ Don't tell me you are shy, come and sit next to your friend” I said and she nod then sat next to me

I adjust her hair and cardigan smiling “ I'm tired of seeing you wearing official clothe that was why I asked you to wear a casual clothe” I whispered

“ Swan...” she whispered.

“ Relax I'm the boss here” I whispered then face front

I saw ten girls standing on the podium staring at me

“ Kiara the notepad, what's it about?” I asked

“ The names of the ten girls standing in front of you” she replied and I nod

” Okay girls flaunt your design out” I said and they all walk away, I take the bottle water that's on the table and drink it.

Shortly a lady step out rocking a style in blue outfit, beautiful

I write the score down and wait for the next lady to come out

The last lady walk away and I write her score down then drink water

The girls come back to the podium and I take my lip in staring at them

“ The styles are okay, everyone tried”

“ They tried, let's launch the whole outfits, boss what do you think?”

“ Yiga what do you think?” I asked and she glance at me

“ It's okay” she replied

“ Okay then let's launch everything out” I said

“ Yes ma'am” Kiara said and I nod

“ Yiga let's go” I said as we walk out of the presentation room then went straight to the company parking lot

I saw a someone running swiftly, a guy and I glance at Yiga,,,,, someone roll a ball and Yiga pick the ball

She opened it and I saw a letter inside, hope it's not a suicide bomb

Yiga gave me the letter and I read it out “ I'm coming for you kitty”

“ What's the meaning of this, is this a prank or what??” I said as I glance around

“ Swan are you a kitty?”

“ Do I look like one to you” I replied

“ Who sent this?”

“ Yiga forget it, it might be those annoying stalker” I replied as I squeeze the paper then throw it away

We enter the car then drive out, I glance back and my eyes almost pop out when I saw figure staring at me

I screamed loud then face front, Yiga held me tightly

“ Swan are you okay??” she asked and I glance back, I could see anyone there

“ Yiga I saw a figure right now” I said, she turn back then face

Just then I heard a loud screech, the car stop and I hit the driver

“ Hey why did you stop the car?” I asked

“ Ma'am...” he raise his hands up.

I saw a figure pointing a gun at him, the figure stare at me and I immediately I screamed

Shadow pov

“ We have another job” Sullivan said and I glance at him

Haeun held my top tightly as she sleep sucking her hand

“ Okay go on” I replied.

“ The governor's wife wants you to eliminate Kim Swan”
Sullivan said

“ Are you serious?” I asked and he nod

“ Remember you asked me to put a tracker on the governor's car, I went to put the tracker in Swan car then hack the governor phone that's connected to the tracker, I ban him from having access to the tracker so right now she's currently in Swan fashion enterprise” he said and I nod

“ Garam take care of Haeun” I said and she collect the baby from me

“ Sullivan let's go” I said as I take my mask then walk out with Sullivan

Few minutes later

We arrive at the parking lot and I saw her car parked in, I hastily bring out a paper and pen

I scribble out some words then fold it, I put it inside a plastic ball that's open, I open it then put the letter inside it and close the ball back

They enter the parking lot and I get down from the car and ran swiftly making sure she feel my presence

I rest on the wall then roll the ball in, I peep and I saw them talking before entering their car

The car move slowly and I ran swiftly to the back of the car, I saw her staring at me immediately she face front, I move away the back then go and hide at the front

I watch as she glance and her partner too glance back, the car was about driving by when I come out from my hiding spot bringing out my gun

The car stop creating a loud screech, the driver stare at me shivering and I point the gun at him, I could see Swan shivering

She opened her mouth widely as if she's screaming and immediately she close her eyes.

I open the car door then point it at her partner, she stare at me

“ Wake her up”

“ She has fainted” she said and I suddenly laughed

“ A scaredy human”

2

(Tripping for danger...)

“ A scaredy human” I muttered and held her partner held Swan tightly.

“ Tell my kitty I'm coming for her soon” I said and walk away, Sullivan drive the car closer and I enter the car, he drive out of the parking lot

“ Vinci what did you just do?”

“ I was just teasing her” I replied and he chuckled

“ When are you going to kidnap?” Sullivan asked.

“ Tomorrow and that same tomorrow I'm gonna eliminate Bima and Donald”

“ But he's yet to bring the cash” Sullivan said

“ Tell the governor to send the money tomorrow morning, Garam will be the one to take the money”

“ The Governor's wife have sent the money, 50 million won and Vinci, someone will like to see you” Sullivan said.

“ Who??...”

“ She call herself Beaver, should I set up a meeting with her cause she said she wanna see you face to face” Sullivan replied

“ Let's meet her today, pick the location”

“ Let's meet her in a coffee shop” Sullivan said and I glance at him.

“ Sullivan it's risky”

“ Where should she meet us?” he asked

“ Tell her to meet you in Romina coffee shop there she will enter the car and you will tie her eyes and make her fall her sleep, bring her to my Mansion”

“ This is one is very risky” he said

“ But it's better than us meeting in a coffee shop”

“ I will call her right now and Vinci I saw something earlier” he said and I glance at him.

“ What did you see?” I asked as I brought out a cigarette and lighter, I lit it up then start puffing out smoke.

“ You laughed and that's unusual, the Vinci I know hardly smile,,,,,,if I can remember the only time you smile is whenever you are with Haeun” he said and I continue smoking, as the smoke come out from my nose and mouth heavily

“ The scene I met her in was funny so I don't know when I laughed” I chuckled and he glance at me

“ Shadow you don't smile at all even if someone say something that's very funny you will just put on a stern face but seeing you smiling that time was surprising” he said

“ Call the Beaver girl”

“ Oh that's right” Sullivan said as he make the phone call, he put the phone on speaker

“ Is this Shadow” I heard a female voice then glance Sullivan

“ Let's meet at Romina coffee shop right now, come with your cash 50 million won” Sullivan said

“ On my way”

“ If I have reach there, I will call you” she said and Sullivan cut the call

“ After this transaction I want you to burn the phone so they won't trace it”

“ Okay boss”

“ Let's go home” I said and he increase his speed, I throw the cigarette away then take the gin that's in car, I drink it gulping everything down

“ Vinci....” he called

“ Do you need anything?”

“ Why are you keeping me close when you won't allow me to touch a gun, you do take me out for missions but yet you never allowed me to do a mission” he said

“ I'm keeping you close because you are so brainy and smart, I take you out on missions because I want you to see the evil deeds the people at the top are doing and I can never allow you to touch a gun cause you are still a kid”

“ Do you know my age? I'm an adult” he glance at me

“ Sullivan you are 18, to me you are still a kid” I replied and he chuckled

“ I'm 18 so let me do a mission” he said

“ Sullivan I won't allow you to get your hands stained with blood, keep on with your hacking”

“ Vinci.....”

“ After this Governor mission, I'm gonna set everyone free” I said and he glance at me

“ But I wanna stay with you” he said

“ You can't stay with me forever”

“ I will stay with you forever” he said and I just nod

He drive inside the compound and park the car properly next to a black SUV car

We both get down from the car and went inside

“ I'm hungry” he muttered and walk away, I saw Haeun crawling around with candy in her mouth as Garam tease her with milk drink

“ Baby....” I called and Haeun giggled, she stare at me then crawl to my side

“ahhh” she giggled as she held my cheek with her two small hands and I smiled at her

“ Daddy loves you” I said and she kiss my cheek, she giggled as she point at the milk that Garam is holding

“ Give her the milk” I said and Garam drop the milk on Haeun palm and she pass the milk to me, she showed me the milk

“Daddy is okay so drink it” I said and she nod, I open the milk drink for her and she drink it as she glance at Garam

Sullivan came back holding a plate of pancake with glass cup filled with fruit juice

“Foodie” Sullivan said as he smiled at Haeun and she giggled loud

Suddenly a phone start ringing and everyone glance at Sullivan

“Why the stare??”

“Your phone” Garam replied, Sullivan gave me the fruit juice with his left hand and use that same left hand to bring out his phone and pick the call

“Are you there?”

“Okay I'm on my way” he said and cut the call then stare at me

“ What happen??”

“ She's at the coffee shop, do you have anything that can make her fall asleep?”

“ Give me a minute” I replied and went upstairs with Haeun, I drop her on the bed as soon I enter the bedroom and I also drop the mask on the bed

I went to drawer then bring out a white handkerchief, I spray something on it then fold it properly,,,,,I went back downstairs and I saw Sullivan ready

“ Use the handkerchief to cover her nose” I said and he nod, I gave him the handkerchief then watch as he walk out of the building

“ Who's coming over?” Garam asked and I glance at her

“ No one important” I replied coldly as I went back upstairs, I could hear a loud cry as I approach my room, I rushed in and met Haeun crying loudly.

“ Baby are you okay?” she increase the volume of her cry and I carried her up, she has eaten already so I don't think she's hungry

I check her diapers and it stained already with poo

“ Baby you are stained already” I said and she giggled, I carried her to the bathroom then off the diapers

I clean her body and she keep giggling if water water touch her curly hair, she loves water so much just like her

Haeun sit in her baby sink as she watch me, I remove the poo from the diaper then wash it, I flush the WC then pack the diapers in a disposable nylon

“ Baby a minute” I went downstairs to throw the diaper in the main dustbin then went back upstairs

I met her playing with the water that's in her sink, I carried her up and she clutch onto me tightly as she wet my tank top,,,,,,I

gently lay her down on the bed and went her to bring out her clothes from her wardrobe

The door open and I tilt my head to see Garam standing at the door

“ Sullivan is back, go and meet him and I will take care of Haeun” she said and I glance at Haeun who's staring at us

“ Take care of her” I said as I take the mask that's on the bed then wear it, I went downstairs and I saw Sullivan standing in front of two people

“ Livan move” I said and he tilt his neck

“ They are yet to be awake” Sullivan said and I nod

“ They will be awake soon” I said as I gently sit on the other couch staring at them while Sullivan stood next to me

“ Sit and explain how they're two?”

“ The lady is Beaver and the guy is Aldo, Swan fiancée” Sullivan replied as he sit next to me, I could see three black box next to them

“ She have a lot of enemies”

“ Her step-mom and step-sister, now her best friend and fiancée” Sullivan said and I sigh

We heard a loud groan and I hastily bring out my gun pointing it at them

They slowly open their eyes then glance around, the lady screamed when she saw me

I know my mask is terrifying

“ Keep your voice low if you don't want me to end you” I said and she hastily cover her mouth

“ Are you Shadow?” Aldo asked and I look away

“ Now that you have seen me, what do you wanna say?”

“ I'm sure you know Kim Swan, the governor's daughter and a fiance to Aldo” Beaver said and I glance at her

“ You talk too much, just go straight to the point” I said coldly

“ Sorry about that” Aldo said and I rolled my eyeballs

“ Shadow I want you to eliminate her” Beaver said courageously and I nod

“ The money” I said and Aldo carry three black box and drop it on the table

“ Open it” Sullivan said and Beaver open the black boxes and I saw money there

“ This is the 50 million won, I want the job done as soon as possible” Beaver said

“ Few minutes ago you were acting like fish and now you are acting like a bitch” I said coldly

“ Your mask was terrifying” she said

“ The job will be the done tomorrow, Sullivan escort them” I said and Sullivan stood then move close to them

He use the handkerchief to cover her nose and she slowly close her eyes then use that same handkerchief to cover his nose

“ Have a wonderful night” I said and went upstairs

The next morning the loud cry of Haeun woke me up and I forcefully open my eyes, I saw pacing round the bed as her cry become loud

“ Baby what's wrong??” I carried her and she keep crying, I check the time and it's just 4am

“ Haeun are you okay??” She keep crying and I hastily check her diapers, it's not stained yet

Maybe she's hungry

I drop her back on the bed and hastily went to the downstairs, to the kitchen to prepare her milk, I prepare it in her bottle water then went back upstairs, I still met her crying

“ What's wrong???” I carried her then gently give her the milk, she drink it as she rush it

She's hungry, she held the bottle tightly as she feast on it, I gently lay on the bed resting my back on the pillow still carrying her.

I slowly close to my eyes to resume my sleep when she start hitting me

“ Baby what do you want?” she pass her bottle to me and I collect it then drop it on the lamp stand, she clutch onto me as she close her eyes to sleep

Thank goodness

She rest her body properly as she rest her head on my chest
and I held her firmly

“ Allow your Dad to sleep” I said lowly as I close my eyes

***** 9am

I open my eyes slowly as I groan loudly and I felt something
heavy on my chest

I glance down and I see Haeun sucking her thumb as she stare
at the wall

“ Baby you are awake” I said and she keep staring at the wall

I gently lay her on the bed then get down from the bed as I
stretch my body

Haeun continue sucking her hand as she stare at the wall

She's gentle today, I went to carry her then touch her neck, her
body is warm

I carried her to the bathroom and bath for her with cold water and after cleaning her I went to drop her on the bed then went back to the bathroom to bath

Soon I was done bathing and I came out from the bathroom tying a towel, she giggled as soon as she see me and I smiled

“ Few minutes ago you were quiet and now you are giggling” I said, I hastily wear her clothe, she is wearing a blue jeans with a white top, I wear her white socks so she won't feel cold

As soon as I was done dressing her, she turn around backing me as she play with the duvet

I use that opportunity to dress, I wear a black trouser with a black top and black jacket

“ Haeun let's go downstairs” I said as I carried her then went downstairs

I met Sullivan working on the system and I could not see Garam

“ Hey where's Garam?” I asked

“ She went to meet to the governor to collect the money from him” he replied and I nod

“ When she come back we're going to make our move” I said and he nod

“ Vinci check this out” he said and I move closer to him, I drop Haeun in her walker then went to sit next to Sullivan

“ Remember you said I should keep an eyes on him, I hack the governor's phones and I saw all this videos and pictures, I think he's selling it out and chaewon video is part of it” Sullivan said as he play the video, the loud cry that came out from the video made me to close my eyes

I don't know when tears start rolling down my cheek as I watch the video

“ That man is an animal, his daughter will pay for it, the thing he did to chaewon I will make sure I do that same thing to his

daughter” I said lowly as I glance at Haeun who's playing with her toys, I break down in tears

“ Vinci....”

“ Let me have my revenge, I want him to feel that pain that passed through that time”

“ His daughter will pay for it”

“ I will hurt her gruesomely and forget the fact that she's a lady”

“ Sullivan I want them to feel that pain”

“ I want them to know how it feels”

Swan pov

I slowly open my eyes and flinch when I saw Yiga resting her head on the bed, I glance around and I found myself in my room

How did I get here??, I remember see a scary figure yesterday

“ Hey Yiga” I called and she slowly open her eyes then lift her head up

“ Swan you are awake” Yiga said and I nod

“ How did I get here?? I remember seeing a scary figure” I said

“ He did not harm us cause you already fainted before he get to our side” she said and I sigh

“ Do you know him?” I asked

“ Not at all but he said he's coming back for you” she replied and I sigh

“ He's crazy or what, he made me faint yesterday” I snapped and she close her eyes for a minute then open it

“ Swan don't get worked up, it's nothing okay” she said and I look away

“ You can go to your room, I need to get dressed” I said and she stood then walk away.

As soon as she step out, I went to bathroom to bath

Soon I was done bathing and I step out wet, I clean my body then apply lotion on it before wearing my clothe, I wear a blue fitted gown then pack my hair in a messy bun

I take my phone that's on the lamp stand and turn it on, I saw a missed call from Aldo and Beaver,,,,,I called Aldo but he's not picking.

“ He's probably with those bitches again” I muttered and my phone rang no sooner, I pick the call

“ Sorry babe I missed your call” Aldo said and I rolled my eyeballs

“ Are you with those bitches” I said

“ Swan what are you saying” he said innocently

“ Aldo stop pretending” I said

“ Swan I'm not pretending, I already told you that the last one was a mistake” he said and I rolled my eyeballs

“ I saw your missed call what do you want??”

“ Swan can't I call you again, why are you rude to me” Aldo said and I breathe out

“ You know what, let's break up, I'm not interested in the marriage again” I said

Have think about it thoroughly, Beaver and Yiga words keep ringing on my mind

Swan you can't get married to a cheater, the only thing he cares about is s€x, he's addicted to it like a drug

“ Swan do you know what you are saying??, are you seeing another guy?? What about the love we shared??” he said

“ Do you think about the love before going on to cheat on me” I said

“ Swan I know you are not in a good mood this morning, let's talk about this later” he said and cut the call

“ Can you imagine, he hang the call on me” I said as drop my phone inside my Chanel bag

I carried my bag then went to Dad's room, I could not find him there

Where's he??

I went downstairs and I met everyone having breakfast

“ Good morning” I greeted as I bow

Dad is not here, where's he??? Did he travel again?

“ Swan sit down and have your breakfast” Mom said and I nod

The maid drag out a chair for me and sit on it then drag it out

The food is much on the table, I take my chopstick and start digging on the food

** Shortly, I was done eating and I drop the chopstick then drink water

“ Thank you for the breakfast” I said as I carried my bag and walk out of the dining room

I went to the second building, heading to Yiga's room, I reach the room and I gently knock on the door

“ Yiga it's Swan” I said and the door open revealing her face

She was wearing a white singlet with a black short, her hair is scattered

“ Were you sleeping” I asked

“ That was before” she replied

“ Sorry for waking you up”

“ No it's fine, come in” she said as she pave way for me to enter
I enter her room then sit on her bed “ Are we going out??”

“ We're going to Aldo house, a surprise visit so wear a casual
clothe” I replied and she nod

She open her wardrobe and brought out a casual clothe as she
dress in front of me

Soon she was done dressing and we walk out of her room

“ Have you eaten?”

“ Not yet” she replied

“ Let's go to a restaurant first” I said

We walk out of the building then went straight to the parking
lot, I enter the car and she drive out of the compound

“ Are we going to your favorite restaurant?” Yiga asked and I nod

“ Aldo called today and I told him I want to cut off the marriage” I said and she smiled

“ You are making a good decision, that guy is a cheat just forget about him” she said and I nod

My phone rang and I check the id, Beaver

“ Hey Swan” she said and I could hear her voice trembling

“ Beaver are you okay?” I asked

“ Swan I'm not okay, I'm in a big debt” she replied with her trembling voice

“ What's wrong???”

“ Swan I need 100 million won, the custom seize my goods and I can't afford to lose my expensive goods” she said

“ Beaver the money is much” I said

“ I know Swan please help me, I need the money right now” she said and I sigh

“ Don't worry I will send it” I said and cut the call

“ Swan what's wrong?” Yiga asked

“ Beaver is in need of money” I replied

“ So what do you wanna do now??”

“ I will send it to her now” I replied

“ Swan....”

“ Yiga she's my friend so I need to help her now that she's in trouble” I said as I brought out my phone and quickly make the transaction to her

I call her line and she pick the call immediately

“ Beaver have you seen it?”

“ Swan thank you I have seen it" she replied

“ Go and free your goods” I said

“ I will, thank you Swan” she said and I cut the call

Yiga arrive at the restaurant and we get down from the car, we enter the restaurant and went straight to the VVIP room,,,,,, I sat on the chair and Yiga sat in front of me glancing around

A waitress came over to my side holding a menu book

“ Ma'am what will you like to order?” the lady asked as she drop two menu book on the table

“ I want a bottle of water, Yiga what about you??”

“ Samosa and apple juice” Yiga replied and the waitress walk away

“ Eat to your satisfaction” I said and she smiled

Soon the waitress came back with food, she drop the plate carefully on the table then walk away

I open the water and drink it while Yiga eat her food in silence

Few minutes later, she was done eating and we walk out of the restaurant after making a payment

We enter the car and drive straight to Aldo Mansion, just hope he's at home

Soon we arrive at his Mansion and I get down from the car then went inside

The door is not locked, I enter the living room and I met it scattered

I saw a lady heels on the couch, I saw panties on the floor, bra and used condom on the couch

“ Swan....” Yiga called and I glance around gulping down

“ Hope it's not what I'm thinking” I said, I take off my heels then went upstairs, as I approach his room I could hear a loud moan, the sound of skin jamming, a loud scream

Someone should please wake me up if this is a dream, my eyes become misty as I slowly open his room door

There I saw him making out with.....Beaver in a crazy position

“ Aldo” I called with a broken voice as I fell on the floor with hot tears streaming down

They notice my presence and Aldo hastily push her off and ran to my side

I glance down and I saw his manhood dangling

“ Swan...”

“ Aldo I hate you, I curse the day I met and you Beaver have fun with his small prick” I said and stagger out of the room

“ I thought your phallus will be huge since you are a cheater but damn it's small like what the f**k” I heard Yiga voice.

3

(Tripping for danger..)

Shadow pov

“ Where are you guys going to??” Garam asked as soon as I step out from the weapon room

“ To kidnap our princess and end those politicians life” Sullivan said

“ Can I tag along?” I glance at Garam

“ No stay at home with Haeun” I said and she rolled her eyeballs

“ Vinci let's go, he's about to reach his Villa” Sullivan said and I nod, we walk out of the building heading to the power bike, Sullivan took the red bike and I took the black bike

We both ignite the engine at the same time then drive out, I follow his lead since he knows his Villa

Shortly we arrive here and we park the bike not far from the Bima's villa then get down

“ Any plan?” Sullivan asked

“ Not at all, we will just sneak in like a thief in the night” I replied and walk away, we pass through the back and we saw a window, I try opening it but it's locked.

“ Sullivan check if the other windows are locked” I said and he nod then walk away

I check the other windows and it's locked, Sullivan came back and pointed at a window that's opened

“ That's the only window that's opened” Sullivan said and I nod

Sullivan open the window wider and I survey the room, there I saw the so called Bima sleeping on the bed peacefully

I jump in then lock the room door, Sullivan jump in too then slowly close the window, I wake the man up and he slowly open his eyes and was about to scream when I bring out my gun and point at him

“ Shhh and don't scream” I whispered and he nod shaking like a drench leaf

“ What do you want?? Name your price??? Who sent you??”

“ Shhh you talk too much” I whispered and he nod.

“ Our soon to be president, the present governor sent us to kill so I just feel you should know that before you die” Sullivan said and I smirk

I brought out a silencer then put it in the gun, I shoot him in his chest twice and watch as blood gush out

“ Sullivan open the window let's go” I said and Sullivan went to open the window

He open the window and jump out, I flew out then close the window

We walk over to the power bike then mount on it, I ignite the engine and drive out speeding fast staying in the same pace with Sullivan

“ Lead the road to Donald Mansion” I said

“ He's not in his house” he replied

“ Where's he???...”

“ Hotel with a girl” he replied

“ A girl??? Is he also a pedophile??”

“ Think so” he replied and increase his speed

Politicians and their dirty games, politicians and their greed.

Shortly, we arrive at the hotel and park the bike properly, I get down from the bike then hang the helmet

“ Sullivan let's go” I said and enter the hotel

We got to the reception and saw a receptionist there, a young lady

“ Good evening ma'am, I will like to see Mr Donald” Sullivan said and I glance around surveying the building

“ Do you have an appointment with him?” she asked

“ Yes so can we go in?”

“ Sure room 304” she replied and we walk away

“ Oh goodness she's so dumb” Sullivan said and I smirk

“ I wasn't expecting it to be so easy” I said and we climb the stairs, we got to the room and I could hear loud moans coming out from the room

That bastard

Sullivan knock on the door and we heard a loud groan

“ Room service” I said and a minute later the door open

I push the lady in and Sullivan enter the room then close the door

“ Mr Donald” I called

“ Who are you??” he shiver

“ I'm Shadow, the assassin that you wanna kill” I replied and he shiver

“ Sir I don't know him, please let me go I will pretend as if this never happened” the lady said and I bring out the gun, point it at her then shoot her forehead, he screamed

“ Shhhh do you wanna die a painful death?” Sullivan said and he hastily cover his mouth nodding his head like a reptile

“ Back to our governor, our bad governor who's also a pedophile” I said as I smirk, I point the gun at him then pull the trigger

“ Vinci....”

“ Sullivan let's go” I said as I put the gun back inside my pocket and walk out, Sullivan walk out and we step out of the hotel

We take the bike and speed out of the hotel before anyone will be suspicious

“ Vinci who's the next target?”

“ My soon to be bride” I replied and he glance at me, our eyes locked

“ Any plan??”

“ We're gonna break in” I replied

Few minutes later we arrive at the governor's Mansion and Sullivan brought out his ipad

“ Where's she??” I asked

“ She's at home” he replied and drop the iPad back inside his small black bag that he hung round his neck

“ Sullivan any idea on how we will break in”

“ I thought you have a plan” he replied and I stare at the building

“ \$hould we drop tear gas??, I'm sure no one will survive it”

“ We wanna kidnap your so called bride and we came with bike” Sullivan said and I rolled my eyeballs

“ The bike is faster than car so let's go inside”

Sullivan open his small black bag and bring out two tear gas, he throw the two tear gas and soon smoke covered everywhere

We entered the house then lock the door immediately, I bring out my gun and get ready to pull the trigger, we saw no one in the living room and we move to her room

The governor is not tight than I thought, maybe because I have enter the Mansion before

We reach her room and the door suddenly open, I point my gun that the person

Swan partner, Sullivan push her in and I entered the room then close the door

I smirk as soon as I saw Swan on the bed shivering, she's gonna faint soon

And yes she suddenly fall on the bed with her eyes closed just like I predicted

“ Fainting is her new hobby” I muttered as I carried her on my shoulder and walk out of the room with Sullivan

We walk downstairs and I saw a guard coming over to my side, I shoot him immediately and walk away, we got outside and Sullivan throw another tear gas.

Smoke covered everywhere and I struggled to come out from the building and I turn back and saw Sullivan coughing hard

“ Hop in let's go”

I mount on the bike and made her stay in front of me, we speed out of the estate heading straight to my Mansion.

Finally things going the way I want without me passing through any stress

Finally I have the cherish gem to myself, they all brought her to me

Let the torture begin

Few minutes later we arrive at the Mansion and she's yet to wake up, Sullivan get down from the bike and come over to my side to hold her

I get down from the bike then carry her in, I saw Garam playing with Haeun

“ Sullivan follow me” I said and went straight to the dark room, I enter the dark room then turn on the light

I drop her on the floor then tie her hands and legs with chain, I cover her mouth with an handkerchief

“ Our gem is having a little nap, let's come back for her” I said and switch off the light then walk out of the room with Sullivan

“ Vinci...” Garam called

“ What do you wanna say” I said coldly and she slowly bite her lip.

“ What are you gonna do with her, you are taking this.....”

“ Garam shut up” I growled and she flinch

“ Vinci....”

“ Do you know that the bastard you are trying to defend took away my joy, he made me who I am today and you want me to let it pass like that No!!!”

“ Kim must feel that pain I'm feeling right now, his daughter will feel that pain cause Haeun is feeling the pain that the governor created, if you don't know anything about what happened just keep quiet” I shouted then carry Haeun away from her and walk away heading to my room

She's spitting gibberish

I enter the room with Haeun and I could feel someone presence

“ Shadow.....” Sullivan called and I glance at him

“ What do you wanna say” I said as I drop Haeun on the rug and give her the toys that's on the table

“ I understand your pain but you don't have to shun her like that” Sullivan said softly and I sigh

“ Swan, is she awake?”

“ Not yet but we can go and check on her” Sullivan said

“ Sullivan.....don't worry nevermind...” I said

“ Shadow are you okay??”

“ Get two bucket of water ready, with a camera and a whip” I replied

“ Vinci are you planning to hit her?” he asked

“ Payback is about to start”

Swan pov

My head bang hard as I slowly open my eyes, I breath out then glance around

Where am I???

Yiga,,, where's Yiga???

I try moving my hands but it's not possible, it's as if I'm tired, I could barely open my mouth to talk

The last thing I remember is being with Yiga when two guys broke in, I only recognize one

The figure that made me faint in the parking lot and that same figure that came to my father's Mansion

Damn it! Where am I ????

The room is dark and suddenly I heard the door open, I hastily cover my face with my hands but bring my hands down when the light was turned on

I saw two guys but it's only one that I recognize

“ Hey figure” I said lowly and he smirk

“ Finally you are awake, I thought you are dead anyways I'm Shadow”

“ Forget about the introduction what am I doing here???, Release me now if you don't wanna face my family wrath” I snapped and he laughed

“ Sorry is gonna be your case

Advertisement

Sullivan pass that bucket to me” Shadow said coldly and I glance at the second guy

The guy gave Shadow the bucket and he poured it on me immediately

My body become wet and misty “ Hey bastard” I yelled and he come closer to me then slap my face hard twice

“ Refer that name back to your father” he said coldly and I spat on his face

“ Sullivan get the camera ready” he said and I glance at the so called Sullivan

He move a phone up staring at me and I face the monster that's in front of me

“ Mr governor surprised” he said as he gave a devilish laugh

“ Daddy save me” I screamed as push him side way and face the camera, he hit my face immediately and I screamed

“ You bitçh??”

“ Pass me another bucket of water”

Sullivan passed him a bucket of water and he poured it on my face

“ Mr governor remember what you did to chaewon, I'm gonna do it back to your daughter, I will have s€x with her vigorously and design her beautiful body with mark” he said and I widened my eyes

“ Daddy save me” I yelled and he hit my face again, my lip I could feel pain there, I touch it and I could feel a cut there, a blood stain

The so called Shadow stood and I hastily held his leg tightly

“ Please I beg you, let me go, I won't open my mouth to tell anyone what happened here, please don't touch me” I pleaded as my cry become loud and he just scoff at me

He push me off then hit my tummy hard, he kick my tummy hard and I just wince in pain

“ I..... I'm.....so.....sor..... sorry” I stuttered and he kicked me hard

“ My soon to be bride I'm coming back to have you” he said coldly and I groan in pain

The Sullivan guy pause the video as he bring the phone staring at me.

“ Your father is a bad man and you are just paying for his sins that's all” Sullivan said and walk out of the room with Shadow.

That's a lie, he's lying, my father is not a bad man

He can't be a bad man, father where are you???, Come and save your precious gem

“ I hate him” I muttered, I try to stood but fell back on the floor, my body is extremely weak filled with pains, I crawl to the door then bang on it hard

“ Someone please save me, he wants to rape me” I yelled as I keep hitting the door

“ He's a bad man”

“ He's lying against my father”

“ Someone please save me” I yelled as I cried hard but I got no response, I slowly fall back as I move away from the door and rest on my wall

I hate him, I hate this place

Swan this is not how you want your life to be, why me??

Beaver pov

I turn the cigarette off and glance at Aldo who's taking drugs, cocaine

“ Baby the assassin called” I said and he glance at me

“ What did he say?”

“ The job is done” I replied and he smiled

“ Finally that bitçh is gone but thank goodness we were fast enough to take something from her” Aldo said and I smiled

“ But the money is small, it won't reach me anywhere talk less of us” I said and he chuckled

“ You should be happy she gave you something” Aldo said and I raise my eyebrow

“ What do you mean??”

“ You don't get, forget about it” he replied and I rolled my eyeballs

His phone ring and I glance at him “ Aldo your phone” I said

He raise his head up and cleared his voice before picking his call

“ Father good evening” Aldo said

“ Seriously father, I'm on my way” Aldo said and drop his phone down

“ Baby what's wrong?” I asked

“ The governor just told me that Swan is missing” he replied and I smiled

“ Should we go together and show them a fake tears?” I said and he chuckled, I stood and move closer to him as I adjust his shirt

“ Beaver you crazy” he said and I kiss his lip deeply

“ Crazy for only you” I muttered and he smiled.

I take my phone and bag then walk out of the building with him, he opened the car door for me and I smiled

“ Thank you” I muttered and enter the car then wear my seat belt, he enter the car and drive out

“ Aldo now that Swan is gone, what's your plan?”

“ I will sympathize with her father and the public, all attention will be on me Beaver you should understand what I'm saying” he said and I nod

“ Aldo I understand” I replied

“ But that won't stop our relationship” he said and I rolled my eyeballs

“ Of course, you're mine for forever” I said and he intertwined my hand into his hand.

Few minutes we arrive at his Mansion and I get down from the car, I rush inside shaking like a spoilt vibrator

“ Swan where are you??” I yelled and I saw Juran coming downstairs crying

“ Tell me it's not true” I said as I let those fake tears

“ Beaver it's true, the security guards are in the hospital fighting for their lives and now Swan is gone” she said crying and I held her hand then drag her to her room

“ Beaver when last do you see Swan?” she asked and I scoff, I cleaned my tears then smirk

“ Your acting is poor, I know you and your mother are behind her disappearance

“ Beaver what are you saying?” she asked innocently

“ Stop acting innocent, it doesn't suit you” I replied as I open her drawer and I saw a cigarette with lighter

I take the cigarette and put a stick in my lip then light it up

“ Juran stop crying those crocodile tears, I have seen the way you always stare at Swan with hatred so acting as if you are innocent” I said as I inhale then puff out smoke

“ Okay fine you got me, I'm behind it” she said and I chuckled

“ I know even a deaf girl can tell, I'm behind her disappearance too” I said and she widened her eyes

“ Beaver....”

“ Keep your voice low” I said as I sit on her black sofa then cross my leg

“ Are you serious?”

“ Take a mic and announce it to the world” I replied coldly and she chuckled

“ The assassin Shadow sent a video to my father” she said and I raise my eyebrow

“ What's the video all about??”

“ He sent a video of him torturing Swan” she replied

“ Finally my dream is coming true” I said and she stare at me weirdly

“ She was shouting Daddy save me” Juran said mimicking her voice and I chuckled

“ You really detest her” I said and she smirk

We heard a soft knock on the door and I hastily take off the cigarette, Juran spray perfume round the room and I spray a mouth perfume in my mouth

I went to open the door and I saw Aldo and the governor standing at the doorway

“ My governor” I bow

“ When last did you see Swan?”

“ I saw her two hours ago” I replied and he sigh heavily

“ Father she's gonna come back home soon” Juran said and I glance at her

“ Beaver that bastard kidnap my daughter, he's hitting her beautiful face and now he wanna have a taste of her” the governor said and I bow

“ He's definitely gonna pay for it by kidnapping by fiancé” Aldo said

Swan pov

I weakly hit the door and there was no response, the door suddenly open and I crawl away

The so called Shadow and Sullivan enter the room smoking heavily and I cough loud

“ The smoke?”

“ Shut up” he growled and I cover my mouth, he take a step forward and I crawl away.

Shadow smoke heavily as he move closer to him while the so called Sullivan just stood taking video

“ Sir please” I pleaded, I crawl away and I was about to run out through the door when he grip my leg tightly and I screamed

Sullivan close the door and I screamed, Shadow hit my face then kiss my tummy before kneeling in between my legs

He pulled me closer and I try pushing him off my body but trust me it's not easy, his strength over my strength

“ Please don't this to me, please” I pleaded as I cried loud, he hit my face

“ Shut up, your father did this same thing to chaewon and you will pay for it” he growled and I hastily reduce my voice, sobbing quietly

He rip off my clothes and undies and before I could say jack I felt something entering my V area, something huge

I screamed as I felt a painful cut in between my legs, I just fall freely on the floor and let him have his ways

There's no use fighting with him when he already have his ways already

Thirty minutes later, he roll off my body and I close my eyes sobbing weakling, he kick me hard then walk away

The Sullivan guy put the phone down and walks out of the room with Shadow

Swan you are ruined.

Swan you are doomed

I hate my life, I just want to die

Daddy please where is you???

My body is stained with blood and I could barely raise my hand up

The door suddenly open and I close my eyes, I could feel someone presence, a hand touch me and I opened my eyes

I saw a lady staring at me, she gently use the towel soaked with water to clean my body

The water is warm, she use the soaked towel to clean my VA***Ina and I groan

“Sorry about that” she muttered and I glance at her

“Please help me, I want to escape” I said crying as I manage to sit upright staring at her

” You can't escape, I can't help you out cause I'm not in control” she said and I held her hand tightly

“Please help me to escape, I won't let anyone know about it” I said crying

“ Expect your dinner” she said and walk out of the room with the bowl of water

“ Please help me” I yelled

A fresh hot tears start rolling down my cheek as I sob quietly

What kind of life is this??

First I caught Beaver with Aldo and now I got kidnapped by my father's enemy

I hate my life I swear

TBC

4

(Tripping for danger...)

Shadow pov

The next morning, the sound of Haeun cry woke me up and I hastily sit upright

I carried her and her cry increase, I brought out milk drink and feed her

She feast on it as she clutch onto me, I touch her tummy and when I notice that it's full I stop feeding her and drop the bottle on the stool that's next to the bed

“ Baby what's wrong?” I said and she's giggled, her teeth is already growing

I get off the bed with her and enter the bathroom, I bath for her and after bathing for her, I went to drop her on the bed and

use the two pillows to guide her two side before going back to the bathroom to bath

After bathing I dress up in black then dress for her Haeun, I wear her a white gown with a white socks

I carried her then walk out of the room, I went downstairs and I saw Sullivan and Garam together

“ Have you check on her” I said and they glance at me

“ Vinci good morning” Sullivan bow

“ Shadow good morning” Garam greeted and I nod

“ Sullivan how's she?”

“ She's in the dark room screaming” Garam replied

“ I want you guys to treat her well” I said

“ Have given her breakfast but she keep begging me to allow her to escape” Garam said

“ Don't betray me like Shiga” I said as I gave her Haeun and enter the dark room with Sullivan

I turn on the light and she start crawling around crying loudly

“ Please don't hurt me” she said and I scoff

“ Don't worry I'm not gonna touch you, your father had s€x with her once, a forceful s€x that almost made her run mad, she almost took life or should I say she die because of your father but I will try and tamper mercy on you” I said coldly and she crawl to my side

“ Please let me go, I won't tell anyone” she begged and I chuckled

“ I'm never gonna let you go, you must feel that pain the person I loved passed through” I said coldly and she cried, her cry become loud and I kicked her away from my side

“ You haven't seen anything, this is the beginning of your suffering by the way they already paid for your life”

“ Don't worry he's not gonna go kill you but you are gonna pass through hell” Sullivan said

“ Please let me go or else you will face my father wrath” she said and I nod

“ I'm gonna face your father's wrath and you are gonna face my wrath, simple” I said and she stood then face me

“ Let me go now or else you won't like what I'm gonna do to you” she said and I smirk

“ You're not in power so what can you do” I said as I laugh devilishly and she raise her hand and was about to hit my face when Sullivan held her hand tightly

“ Sullivan drop her hand down, let her hit and she's gonna receive triple of it” I said coldly and she move away screaming

“ Somebody save me” she screamed and I scoff

“ Nobody is gonna save you so just keep quiet and follow my order” I said coldly

“ Never I hate you” she shouted

“ I never begged for your love” I said Icily as I step a step forward and she crawl backward, I take another step and she crawl away

She was about to crawl to the door side when I held her hair and drag

She screamed loud and I laughed devilishly “ Keep your voice low” I growled and she try to free herself away from me

Then I start hitting her vigorously and she wince in pain, her face and memories start rushing, her last smile before she died and I screamed loud with tears rolling down

I fell on my knees breathing heavily as tears keep rolling down

Swan pov

He hit me hard and I wince in pain just then he suddenly screamed, he fell on the floor and I could see hot tears rolling

Is he okay???

Why am I suddenly worried about him?? Someone that defiled me

“ I hate your father” he said and walk out of the room and I glance at the Sullivan guy

“ Your father ruined the person that's important to him so he wants him to feel that same pain” Sullivan said and I scoff

“ You guys keep saying my father is a bad man, what did he do exactly??? Why must I suffer for it” I yelled and he chuckled

“ If we kidnap your father he won't feel that pain that Shadow is passing through but now that he have you, I'm sure your father will feel that same pain he's passing through” Sullivan said

“ What the hell are you saying” I yelled and he chuckled then walk out of the room

How is my father a bad man???

They are definitely lying, he's a good man

They all envy my father good deeds, they are liars

“ Someone save me” I yelled

I crawl to the door and bang on it hard, I bang on it very well but I got no response

“ Shadow please let me go” I yelled but I got no response

“ Just kill me, please kill me instead of punishing me for the thing I barely know” I yelled and the door open, I move backward and saw Shadow entering the room

“ You were saying something before” he said as he take a step forward and I crawl backward

“ Please let me go, don't punish me for something I barely know” I begged and he laughed

“ Let me enlighten you a little bit,,,,,, your family already paid for your life” he said

“ No you're lying, my family love me so what are you saying”

“ Should I also tell you, your true life story?”

“ No you are lying, you don't know anything about me”

“ Kim Swan, a 23 years old fashion designer and commercial model, your mother died two weeks after giving birth to you” he said

“ No! That's not true”

“ Tomorrow will be a history day, I will take things slowly” he said

“ That's a lie, my mother died immediately after childbirth”

“ She died two weeks after giving birth to you

Advertisement

oh I guess your so called caring father did not tell you that” he said

“ Please let me go”

“ No you're gonna rot here” he said Icily and walk out of the room

I rest weakly on the wall and close my eyes, Swan just forget about it

That bastard won't release me, daddy please where are you???
Come and save your precious gem

Yiga pov

I watch as the governor pace round the room with a worried face

“ Yiga are you sure he kidnapped her?” the governor asked

“ Yes sir and this is not gonna be the first time that he's gonna show up” I replied

“ Why can't you talk since” Ms Karina said and I glance at her

“ He was appearing to us like a shadow just like his name implies” I replied

“ Don't let us blame anyone instead let's look for the way out, I can't allow my fiance to suffer in the assassin hand” Aldo said and I scoff

So that cheater have the gut to open that his stinking mouth

A hunch is telling me that Karina and Juran know something about what's happening

“ I don't wanna lose my bestie” Beaver said and she glance at me

“ My governor, I want you to be rest assured that nothing is gonna happen to Swan” I said

“ Nothing is not gonna happen to her and that idiot is hitting her as if he's hitting a punching bag” the governor said raising his voice a little bit

“ Father nothing is happen please calm down” Juran said

“ No one should tell me the word calm down” the governor said and walk out of the room

“ If that bastard touch my Swan, I promise to make life miserable for her” Aldo said and I scoff

“ Shyster...” I said and walk out of the room

Swan please stay strong, I'm coming for you, don't give up easily

Please act strong for my sake, I followed the governor to his room

“ Go back and stop following” the governor said.

“ I just wanna make sure you are okay” I said and he glance at me, I enter his room and close the door

“ Yiga I'm okay, did he say when he kidnapped her?”

“ No sir” I replied

“ Okay you can leave”

“ Sir what do you plan on doing?” I asked

“ Hire a private investigator to bring back my daughter” he replied

“ Can't we involve the police?” I asked

“ No this issue doesn't concern the police” he replied

“ Are you hiding anything?” I asked and he turn around and face me

“ No I'm not, I just don't wanna involve the police cause the investigation is gonna be slow and by the way you look beautiful” he said and I scoff

So he wanna flirt with me when his daughter is in an unknown place suffering

“ Governor..”

“ Let me have you again, your tight V area is making go crazy” he said and take a step forward

“ Mr governor do you know what you are saying??? Are you drunk or what??”

“ Sweetie I know what I'm saying” he said and take another step forward and I take a step backward

“ Your family are around please don't do this, see me as your daughter” I said and he chuckled

“ It's not gonna hurt, I will be gentle” he said

“ Sir your daughter is under captive and you are talking about s€x” I said

He grab my waist and kiss my lip forcefully, I push him away with my whole strength and ran out of the room

That man is a maniac, the only thing he thinks about is s€x and nothing else, his daughter is under captive, he was worried about it few minutes ago and now he's talking about s€x

He's totally sick

I walk out of the main building and went straight to the second building, I went to my room

“ Swan please stay strong for me” I muttered as I enter my room and close the door, I fell on the bed and weep silently

No sooner, I heard a soft knock on the door and I stood to go check who's knocking

I open the door and saw Beaver standing at the door staring at me

“ What are doing here?” I asked and she push me side way, she enter my room glancing around

“ So this is the small room that you are sleeping in, I thought you were sleeping with Swan in her room” she said smiling

I went to sit on bed and watch as she parade my room touching stuffs

“ Stop touching my stuffs” I said

“ Will you beat me if I don't stop” she said and I scoff

“ What do you want?” I asked

“ What you saw yesterday, do spill it out to anyone” she said and I smirk

“ Are you scared??”

“ Yiga.....” she said

“ I will spill it if I want so you have no right to tell me what to do” I said

“ Who's giving you the audacity to talk back at me” she said

“ You caused it....” I trailed as I move closer to her, I touch her body hug gown

“ Beaver she love you and the only thing you can use to pay her back is to do wish her bad but know something, if Swan should die forget it you are gone, I will start by exposing your dirty secrets and paint your image bad”

“ Is this a threat?” she said

“ No it's the truth” I said and push her out of my room

Shadow pov

“ Are you okay now?” Sullivan asked as he gave me a bottle of water

“ I'm okay now” I replied lowly as I drink the water

“ Why did you break down earlier?” he asked and I glance at him

“ Chaewon memories start rushing in suddenly” I replied

“ Do you think she will be happy if she's here to see you doing all this” Sullivan said

“ I'm just trying to put an end to it, I wanna defend her cause I don't want her to die a useless death” I said

“ Vinci I understand but you doing this to her is...”

“ Sullivan if I don't do this to him, he won't know his right and wrong” I said

“ You score a point” Sullivan said and I suddenly chuckled

“ Try to smile often cause it bring out that sweet side of you, this is the second time I'm gonna see you smiling genuinely” Sullivan said and I nod glancing

Garam came downstairs with Haeun whose hands are filled with toys and mouth is filled with candy

She gently drop Haeun on the tiles and she crawl to my side

“ Baby...” I called and she crawl into my arm

“ Have she eaten?” I asked as I carried her up

She giggled as she touch my cheek with her small hands smiling

“ I have given oat and milk” Garam replied and I nod

“ Thank you” I muttered, I hug her then sooth her back gently

My hand touch her hair and it's packed into two messy bun

“ Garam do you touch her hair?” I asked

“ I styled her hair for her, if you don't want it I can loose it” she said

“ No it's fine” I muttered and I drop her down, Haeun crawl on the floor

Shadow move his attention on Sullivan and Garam, without them knowing Haeun have already crawl to the dark room

The door was opened and it was not locked, the light was turned on

Haeun crawl inside the room and Swan widened her eyes in bewilderment as she saw a baby crawling over to her side

Haeun held Swan shoulder tightly as she slowly stand, she touch Swan cheek and Swan hug her

“ You're beautiful and you look so much like your father” Swan said and Haeun giggled

I glance around and I could not find Haeun, my eyes move to the secret room and I hastily stood and rush there

“ Vinci....” Sullivan called and I ignored him

I widened my eyes when I saw Haeun clutching onto her, Swan held her tightly as Haeun rest her head on her Boobs

“ Haeun..” Sullivan said and Swan glance at her

“ What are a beautiful name so you have a father” Swan said and I ignored her last word

I went to carry Haeun from her and she start crying

“ Vinci she's crying, she doesn't want you” Sullivan said

“ Baby it's me, daddy” I said and hug her, she cried and a minute later her cry reduce.

“ You have two personality with two names, interesting” Swan muttered and I glance at her

“ What is she saying??”

5

(Tripping for danger...)

Swan pov

The door was opened, it was not locked, perfect time to escape

I was about to stand when I saw a baby crawling, she crawl to my side then held my shoulder for support

The baby touch my cheek and I hug her firmly, she carry her and she rest her head on my Boobs sucking her small thumb

She glance at me and giggle revealing her tight dimples, her brown eyes with smooth skin, I kiss her forehead and she giggled

I smiled brightly at her just then Shadow and Sullivan rushed in with a lady

Shadow widened his eyes when he saw me holding a baby, is that his baby??

“ Haeun..” Sullivan said and I glance at the baby

“ What are a beautiful name so you have a father” I said

Shadow came to my side and carry the baby, she start crying immediately

“ Vinci she's crying, she doesn't want you” Sullivan said and I glance at Shadow

Wait his name is Vinci, I'm confused how many names does he have??

“ Baby it's me, daddy” Shadow said and hug her, she cried and a minute later her cry reduce, she held him tightly

“ You have two personality with two names, interesting” I muttered and they all glance at me

“ What are you saying?” Shadow said

“ You're a father so why are you hurting me”

“ She's not my daughter” Shadow said and I scoff

“ Don't lie, the striking resemblance is too much”

“ Garam and Sullivan leave this room” he said Icily and the lady glance at me

She frown at me before walking out of the room with Sullivan

What's wrong with her??

“ If she's my daughter what are you gonna do about that” he said Icily

“ Your daughter is beautiful and you....you have two names with two personalites”

“ Kim Swan...”

“ Shadow and Vinci, dangerous assassin and caring father” I said and he smirk

“ Today is not history day so I won't say much” he said and walk out of the room with the baby

He close the door and I could hear the sound of key moving, he lock the door so I won't be able to escape

Something is off about him, when he was with Haeun I could see another expression on his face, I could see love in his eyes but whenever he's here alone with me, I could see anger

“ Swan what's wrong with you??. Do you wanna believe all those bullshit that he's saying” my subconscious mind

“ Swan get yourself together, look for a way to escape and stop thinking about that bastard” I muttered

I stood and pace round the room, the light is still on and my eyes caught a clock on the wall

Hope this clock is working, I check the time and it's just 7:25pm, the date is correct but time, I'm not sure about it

Swan think of a plan, you need to escape and get out from here

Or what about I escape tomorrow, I glance around the room and I saw an iron rod on the floor at the end side

“ Perfect I will use the iron rod on him tomorrow” I muttered as I walk to the end side and take the rod

The rod is small in size and it's rusty, I touch it very to feel it strength and it's still strong.

“ I will use this on him” I muttered as I drop the rod back at the end side then sit in front of the rod to cover the view so no one will see it, I move my knees close to my tummy and rest my head on it.

“ Dad I miss you” I muttered

“ Yiga I miss you too” I muttered as my eyes become misty, I sob quietly, I cried till I start feeling a loud bang in my head

“ Oh goodness” I muttered as I lay on the floor and sleep off without wasting time

Garam pov

“ It's a surprise when I saw Haeun hugging Swan” Sullivan said and I just nod staring at the dark room, stretching to see if I know what's going on there

“ Garam are you listening to me” I heard a voice and a tap then glance at Sullivan

“ Were you saying something?”

“ Garam what are you thinking about??? I have been saying something since and you did not reply” Sullivan said and I take my lip in as I stare at the dark room, stretching my neck to see if I can peep in

Someone stood blocking my view as I stretch my neck, I slowly raise my head and I can see Sullivan staring at me, I push him side way frowning my face

“ Why are you stretching your neck like a giraffe instead just enter the room” he said and I rolled my eyeballs

“ You know I can't enter that room, Shadow hate me and he doesn't want to relate with me” I replied

“ He doesn't hate you” Sullivan said and I glance at him

“ He doesn't hate me and he's cold towards me”

“ Vinci is just trying to maintain a distance, he doesn't want you to fall in love with him cause it will be a wasting of time” Sullivan said and I raise my eyebrow

“ Are you sure of what you are saying”

“ When you guys had s€x, it was then you started misbehaving and he doesn't like it that's why he's acting towards you” Sullivan said

“ But too bad I love him”

“ Garam it's not love it's called lust,,,,, Don't let this lust change your sweet attitude” he said

“ What do you mean?”

“ Garam I saw you glaring at Swan, you don't need to do that instead let's look for ways we can use to appease Shadow so he can set her free, I'm really pitying that girl” Sullivan said and I sigh

First time he's ever gonna say something meaningful, Garam you don't need all this childish behavior

“ You're making sense this time around but I really need you to tell me what really happened between Shadow and the governor, I wanna know who's chaewon to him” I said and he sigh

“ Chaewon is his sister and Haeun is his daughter” he said

“ Continue...”

“ Later he's coming over” Sullivan said and I glance at the dark room, I saw Vinci locking the door with a key as he come over to my side

“ Garam change her clothe and tomorrow I need to get something for me” he said

“ Vinci tomorrow is my shift, I'm starting night duty tomorrow night and I will be back in the morning by 8am everyday” I said and he made the O sound then nod

“ I totally forgot, I just want you to get Haeun a new set of clothes, shoes and undies” he said

“ Okay let's do it like this, I will get the clothe for her first before going to the hospital and the following morning I will bring clothe home” I said and he just nod

“ So you can't bring it home before going to the hospital”
Sullivan said and I tap his cheek

“ Do you know how it feels to be a doctor, I guess you don't know” I said and Vinci chuckled and Haeun continue playing with his hair

“ I will send the money and those money that Swan family drop, you will take 50 million won and Sullivan will take 50 million won, the remaining 100, send it to the orphanage home with that anonymous name” Vinci said and I nod

“ When should I do it?” I asked.

“ Within this week” he replied as he drop the baby on my arm and stroll out

“ Swan is right, two names with two personalities” Sullivan said and I stare at his back view, I carry Haeun properly as I pet her

“ He's an assassin, he enjoys killing but there's something that's keeping me unstable, why is he doing charity?”

“ He's an orphan, he was once a commoner so he knows how it feels to be suffering, he once lived in the orphanage home with chaewon but he left the orphanage home early leaving chaewon there alone, I think it was that period that the ugly incident happened” he said

“ Sullivan why are you knowing everything that's going on” I said

“ Well because I'm his left hand” Sullivan said and I rolled my eyeballs

“ Okay tell me everything”

“ Vinci and chaewon are siblings

Advertisement

they have been staying in the orphanage home for years, when Vinci clock 25 he left the Orphanage home” he said

“ Why??”

“ Garam he's a man so he needs to establish his own family” he replied and I nod

“ Okay continue”

“ He got married to Alice, she got pregnant for him and she gave birth to Haeun but died immediately after childbirth and during that period chaewon was with him but she hardly stay at home cause she's always in the orphanage home” he said

“ That was painful” he chuckled

“ So few weeks after Alice death, chaewon started acting weird, the cheerful girl become cold and she hardly step out” he said

“ Okay continue” I said

“ Story for another day” Sullivan said and walk away

“ Joy killer” I yelled and he wave at me still backing me as he climb the stairs

“ Damn it” I muttered, I carry Haeun to Vinci room

I knock on the door before entering the room, I enter the room and I met him sitting on the bed smoking heavily

“ Why are you smoking??? Is anything bothering you?” I asked and he ignored me

Now he's back to his cold, frosty and grumpy attitude, I went to Haeun wardrobe and brought her pyjamas,,,,I enter the washroom and close the door

I drop her in the sink and turn on the water, she start moving her body giggling

She enjoys water, she loves playing with water, she splash water on my face and I chuckled, I clean her body thoroughly

Soon I was done cleaning her body and I carry her out of the bathroom tying a small white towel round her body

Vinci still remain in that same position smoking

I dry the water off her body then wear her pyjamas, I apply face powder on her face and she smiled

“ Do you still wanna smoke in front of your daughter” I said and he turn off the cigarette light, he cleaned the table

“ Thank you for cleaning her up” he said as he collect the baby from me

“ We need to talk” I said

“ No I'm busy” he said

“ Vinci I'm sorry for acting that way, I just love you but right now it feels I'm not in the right position to love you” I said in a whispering form and he glance at me

“ Garam...”

“ I will stay on my lane and support you in everything you do, my job here is just to treat you against if you get injured and I usually follow you to do your missions, tho I never kill anyone before but I follow you to save your life against if something bad happen but recently I don't follow you because of Haeun but I hope you stay safe” I whispered and he suddenly hug then move away

A 3 sec hug

“ You working with me doesn't feels right” he said

“ You're taking down the bad people in the country and not innocent souls” I said

“ But I killed Donald mistress” he said and I chuckled

“ It's fine, do you know that your name send shiver to people's body” I said.

“ What do you expect I'm an assassin, I kill for fun” he said

“ Then don't feel bad for killing Donald mistress” I said

“ Garam I wasn't feeling bad, you were defending me right now that I don't kill innocent souls and I'm just telling you that I just killed an innocent souls recently” he said and I chuckled

“ But must of the people you kill are bad people” I said and he nod

“ Garam thank you even tho I behave rudely and coldly to you” he said

“ It's fine good night” I said and walk out of the room, I went to the third room next to his room cause that's my room, I enter the room and close the door then rest my back on the door

“ Garam you did well” I muttered as I hit my chest, I take off my hairy slippers and fall on the bed, I close my eyes and sleep without bathing

Sullivan pov

I came out from the washroom tying a towel round my waist, I pull the towel and wear my pant before wearing my pyjamas

and the cap that look like cat face, I walk out of my room and went straight to Shadow room

His room door is closed as usual, I gently open the door and I saw him cleaning his wet hair with a white towel

“ Do you need anything?” he asked

“ No I'm good, I just came to check on you” I replied

“ Sullivan I'm fine, thank you for your concern” he said

“ Are you sure you are fine?” I asked and watch as he lay on the bed and carry Haeun who's sleeping peacefully, he drop her on his chest and she move her mouth as if she's sucking her tongue

Vinci use the duvet to cover her body, I set a pillow behind him and he rest his back on it

“ Thank you” he muttered and I nod

“ Are you sure you are fine?” I asked and he nod

“ Sullivan I'm fine, do you wanna tell me anything?” he said

“ Are you really going to tell Swan her history, the person that sent us to eliminate her”

“ She deserve to know the truth, I want her to see her real enemies” he replied and I nod

“ That's fine by me” I said

“ Anything else?” he asked

“ No that's all” I replied and stood

“ Sleep tight” he said and I nod smiling, I walk out of his room

No sooner the phone ring and I check the id, an unknown number, I pick the call

“ Is this Shadow?” I heard a deep voice

“ Yes what can I do for you”

“ I have a job for you, a mission and I want you to do it” he said
and I hastily went back to Shadow room

I gesture at him not to talk and I put the phone on speaker

“ Okay go on what do you want Shadow to do for you?”

“ I want you to eliminate the governor for me” he said

“ Who are you??”

“ Opposing party, Linco” he replied and I glance at Shadow

“ Consider the job done” Shadow said and cut the call

“ What are you planning to do?” I asked

“ Eliminate Linco, the governor himself have a special
punishment that he's gonna receive after I'm done with his
daughter” Shadow said and I nod

“ Tomorrow we will talk about the plan” I said

“ We're not collecting any money” he said and I nod

“ I will do my research on him” I said

“ Don't stress yourself” he said and I nod

I walk out of his room and went straight my room that's next to Garam's room

Swan pov

I opened my eyes and glance around, I glance at the chain that's in my hand then stood, I check the time 8am

The chain tied to my hand is kinda big, it capture my wrist firmly but the distance from the my left hand to my right hand is much, I sit down back on the floor and use my long gown to cover the rod

The suddenly open and I saw Shadow and Sullivan entering the room

“ Where's your baby Vinci” I said and he smirk

“ Having a nice time without you” he replied

Sullivan close the door and Shadow walk over to my side and I
gulp down

He reach my side then bend down low, he brought out a key
and use it to unlock the chain then remove it from wrist and leg

My body become free at last but I need to get out from here

“ I remember telling you that I have a history to tell you” he
said and I scoff

“ Liar..”

“ I remember telling you that you are paying for your father's
sins, before I kidnap you I have been trailing your father for
months just then someone told you are his cherish gem, that if I
want him to feel pain I should just take his gem”

“ So since then I have been thinking of way to kidnap you just then your fiancée Aldo and best friend Beaver with your step-sister Juran and step-mom Karina, they all came to me and paid for your life”

“ They said I should eliminate you, can't you see they brought the gem to me without me passing through any stress” he said wearing a devilish smile

“ You're a liar, I get the fact Aldo and Beaver betrayed me by having a secret affair but my family can never sell me out” I screamed and he held my cheek tightly, he slap my face hard and tears roll down.

“ Never shout on me, I hate noise” he whispered

“ Let me go you psycho” I screamed and he slap me again hard, I almost lost myself

He move away then turn back, I take the rod and stood, I was about to hit his head with the rod when he turn around and hold my hand tightly.

Shadow forcefully take the rod away from my hand and held my hand firmly as he slap my face hard, I seriously can't count the slap

“ I was planning on showing you mercy but for what you just did, I will deal with you” he growled and brought out a pocket knife

My heart start beating fast like a drum, as if the heart is gonna jump out.

He took the knife and use it to stab my wrist, he cut my wrist and blood start gushing out

“ You think you are smart” he growled and I screamed in pain

He push me and I fell on the floor, he kick me hard on my face and was about to kick me again when Sullivan hold him

“ Shadow don't this, don't let that bastard to turn you into a monster” Sullivan said as he hold him tightly

“ Sullivan let go of me” Shadow said and Sullivan held him tighter

“ Who's the bastard” I yelled with my strength

“ Your two face father” Shadow growled and my body froze

6

(Tripping for danger...)

Swan pov

I slowly open my eyes and I glance around, I find myself in a room, a big beautiful room, I find myself on a king sized bed

How did I get here??

What am I doing here??

A lot of thoughts run through my head but the thoughts was cut short by a voice and a giggle

I glance at my left side and I saw a lady sitting on a black couch holding a baby as she stare at me

“ Finally you are awake” she said and I nod glancing at around, the baby Haeun smiled at me as she jump on the lady, her small hand is filled with saliva.

Just then something cross my mind, my wrist, I hastily check my wrist and I saw bandage neatly tied to my wrist

“ Are you feeling any pains?” the lady asked and I nod

“ Not at all and..... who are you???, Are you his wife?”

“ No I'm his friend, I'm Garam nice to meet you Swan” she said and I nod

My eyes move to the door that's opened and I glance at her, our eyes locked

“ Your wanna escape, you are free to go” she said smiling and I hastily stood then ran to the door.

“ As you are stepping your foot out of this house, the boys around will shoot your forehead, what a straight bullet” I heard

her voice then froze, I stop walking then slowly turn around and face her

“ Are you joking?”

“ No I'm serious, Swan if you wanna leave here alive don't act stubborn, obey his rules and see what will happen” she said softly and I slowly close my eyes then open it

“ Did you just say rules, I should obey the rules of that monster”
I half yelled

“ So you wanna act stubborn to him, okay go ahead I won't stop you but know something, your stubbornness and trust for people is the cause of the mess that you find yourself in” she said and I raise my eyebrow

“ What do you mean?”

“ Your family are the one that put you into this mess or should I say you are the one that put yourself into this mess indirectly by trusting people easily” she said and I look away

“ Like you said yesterday, Shadow is a man with two names and two personalities, circumstances made him who he is today so the only piece of advice I can give you is that, why don't you sit down, read him like a book and know his pains, know what he's passing through then you know everything that's going on” she said

“ Young lady...”

“ Swan I'm Garam” she said and I nod

“ Garam, no matter the pain he's passing through, tell him to inflict it on the person that caused it” I said

“ That's why he's inflicting it on you cause you and your father are one” she said

“ Meaningless” I said and she chuckled

“ Your father is a bad man, do you know that your father raped your personal assistant Yiga” she said and I raise my eyebrow

“ Huh!!!! What are you saying???”

“ Are you blind to notice it, the day Shadow came to your house, don't tell me you did not see Yiga rushing out from the governor's room with a blood stain” she said and I scoff

“ You are a liar” I said and she smiled

“ Do you not see the hot tears on her face or should we talk about the walking step” she said and my mind went back to that scene, I slowly fall on the floor hitting my butt hard

“ No it's not true”

“ It's better you believe, go and clean your body and change your clothe, meet me downstairs” she said and walk out of the room with Haeun

She's lying right???

Someone should please tell me it's not true

A part of me wanna believe and another part of me does not want to believe her

I slowly stood and staggered into the washroom, I have a long bath, I clean and wash my body thoroughly

My body feel the water and soon I was done bathing, I wear the skinny jeans and baggy tank top that's on the bed then dry my hair with a towel and dryer, when my hair have dried, I went downstairs and I met Garam pushing Haeun on her stroller

“ I'm here” I said and she glance at me

“ You're beautiful, come here let me treat your wrist and face” she said and I take a step closer, I sit on the couch next to her and watch as she loose the soaked bandage

She clean my wrist and face injury with a wool and apply a cream on it, the cream she applied on my wrist and face start it effect, I could feel it hotness

“ Hey Garam it's painful” I muttered

“ The injury is gonna heal on time” she said and I nod

I glance around and I could not see Shadow nor Sullivan around

“ Where are they?” I asked

“ They went on a mission” she replied

“ Are they really an assassin?” I asked

“ He's an assassin, Sullivan is just like a son to him” she replied and I nod

I glance at Haeun and I caught her staring at me, she keep giggling at me and I smiled at her

“ Swan come and have your food” she said and I nod

She went to dining table with Haeun and I followed her, when I reach the dining room I could see different type of food on the dining table

“ Eat and get satisfied before he comes back” she said and I nod

I hastily sit down and start digging on the food, I hurried eat the food till I'm satisfied, when I was done eating I drank water

“ Use this medicine for pain relief” she said and I nod, I take the medicine and swallow it then drink water to digest it down

“ Swan don't punish yourself, don't act stubborn if you wanna get on his good side” she said and I sigh

We went back to the living room and I gently sit on the couch, I stare at her and she adjust Haeun hair

A lot of things start going through my head and I don't know when I start saying it out

“ I'm scared of him cause his face is scary, his smile is scary and I can't live up to it that's why I try hurting him, I find hard to believe my Aldo, Beaver, Juran and Mom sent him to kill me” I said lowly and I don't know when tears start rolling down

“ My fiancée, I caught him cheating on me with my best friend and yet I never fight with him, is this really how they wanna pay me for my good deeds” I said and she held my hand and I face her

My eyes are very misty, hot tears is really rolling down my cheek, I'm scared to accept the truth about my fiancée, I'm scared of him tho I act tough in front of him, I'm scared to accept the fact that my father is a bad man

“ My soul wanna know the truth but my mind is not ready to know the truth” I said and she smiled, she squeeze my hands lightly

“ Once you know Shadow's story, it's then you will know the real face of your father” she said and I nod

She clean my tears and I look away, no sooner I heard a loud cry and I glance at Haeun, I could see her crying

“ I think she's crying for you” Garam said and I chuckled, I carried her and she hug me tightly, she touch my cheek crying

“ Haeun I'm fine so stop crying” I said and her cry reduce, I kiss her forehead and she giggled

“ Don't act stubborn” she said, I carried Haeun properly and she rest her head on my boobs staring at the pace

Shortly, I heard the sound of the door opening, my eyes move to the door and I saw Shadow walking in, immediately I drop Haeun back on the stroller and run to the dark room, I was about to enter the dark room when I heard his voice

“ How's your wrist” I froze at his statement then slowly turn around to face him

“ Please don't kill me, I find myself on the bed, she treat me and I forgot to go back to the dark room, please don't kill me, spare my life cause I wanna see my father” I said as I kneel rushing my words with my palms together rubbing each other

“ I never said I'm gonna kill you, if I wanna kill you I won't have ask her to treat you and feed you well” he said coldly and I look away as I whimper

“ How's your wrist?” he asked softly

Advertisement

he's not cold this time around

“ Getting better all thanks to her” I said

“ Shadow please release me, I believe you are saying” I said and he nod

“ Not yet, I'm not done achieving my aims” he said and take a step forward and I step backward entering the dark room

He came swiftly over to my side and I screamed in fear

“ I'm not gonna hurt you” he said softly and I look away using my hands to cover my face

He slowly bend in front of me and his hand touch my hair, I shiver under his touch and he chuckled

“ I'm gonna be nice to you if you know how to stay on a lane” he said and I nod, he tucked my hair behind my ear and brought out his phone

He play a video and I watch as he killed a man brutally, immediately my heart skip a beat

“ That man paid me to end your father's life but you have redeem it already” he said coldly and I hastily shake my head like a reptile

“ Get ready for your torture” he said and stood, he was about to walk away when I held his leg firmly

“ You said you are gonna hit me” I whimpered

“ Sorry the urge to hit you suddenly arise” he said and I held him tighter

“ Please don't hit me, I will do whatever you want” I said

“ I don't need anything away from you” he said coldly and push me away, he walk out of the room and I fall freely on the floor

Few minutes ago he was acting nice and now he's back to his cold and ruthless behavior

“ Father lord please help your daughter” I muttered as I stare at my wrist

Soon the door open and he came back with Sullivan who's holding a phone

Sullivan close the door and rest on it then carry the camera up, Shadow come over to my side and held my neck tightly, I held his arm hitting it as he tighten his grip round my neck

“ Mr governor remember you did this Chaewon or should I help you to regain your memory back” Shadow said and I hit his hand that's holding my neck firmly

“ P....pl.....plea..... please” I stuttered and he let go of my neck, I cough loud as I lay on the floor gasping for air and he pull my hair to face him

“ Mr governor are you happy to see her face, the design on her face, are you happy to see it” he said and I face the camera

“ Daddy why??? Your precious gem is suffering for something she barely know anything about” I said as I cry loudly and he raise his hand to hit me but stop halfway

“ Mr governor if you wanna save your precious gem, come out and tell the world your dirty secret” Shadow said as he gesture at Sullivan to pause the video

Shadow glance at me then walk out of the room and I glance at Sullivan

“ Be thankful” Sullivan said and walk out of the room closing the door

Thank goodness he did not hit me today, I'm so grateful

Governor pov

My phone made a sound and I glance at it, I hastily take it and saw a message from that dangerous assassin, a video and I play it

I watch as he suffocate Swan and I increase the volume of my phone to hear what he wanna say

“ Mr governor remember you did this Chaewon or should I help you to regain your memory back” Shadow said and Swan hit his hand that's holding her neck firmly

“ That bastard” I grit my teeth angrily, I watch as my Swan beg him

“ He should pray I never catch him” I grit my teeth

“ Daddy why??? Your precious gem is suffering for something she barely know anything about” Swan said as she cry loudly and he raise his hand to hit her but stop halfway

“ My daughter is really suffering in that bastard” I whimper as I continue watching the video

“ Mr governor if you wanna save your precious gem, come out and tell the world your dirty secret” Shadow said and the video end

Say my dirty secret for something that's not my fault, if only chaewon cooperate with me, all this won't happen, if only she did not prove to be stubborn, all this won't happen

Now he wanna put the blame on me, I wonder who's she to him, is she his wife or what??

My phone rang and I pick the call, a call from the my private investigator

“ We tracking the number, but it keep telling us that it's a burnt phone” Scott said and I sigh

“ He just use that same number to message right now, as usual he sent a video of him hitting my daughter, my precious gem” I said raising my voice a little bit

“ Sir do you do anything to hurt him?”

“ What rubbish are you saying??. Track him and rescue my daughter, she's really suffering in his hand” I half yelled

“ Yes Sir” he said and I cut the call, I throw my phone on the bed and I heard the sound of the door opening, I glance at the door and I saw Karina entering the room

“ Sweetheart you are here, come downstairs for dinner” She said and I look away

“ I'm not hungry”

“ You better don't kill yourself over that bastard” she said and I glance at her

“ What did you just say??”

“ Swan is a bastard, her mother is slüt” she said

“ Karina watch your mouth” I said

“ Let me say the truth” she said

“ Karina never speak heal about Nayeon”

“ I get the fact she was my friend but I won't allow her bastard child to take over my home” she said

“ What are you saying??”

“ Swan this, Swan that, why are her?? Are my children not good enough, governor you are not fair in your treatment” she half yelled

“ Karina we're talking about Swan here”

“ Governor I don't care, her being kidnapped should not affect me, perform your responsibilities on the children” she said

“ Karina..”

“ Let Juran take over her fashion company and the new company you built for her, let my children have access to your bank account be fair” she yelled and I angrily raise my hand to hit her but stop halfway

“ You wanna hit me like the way you use to hit Nayeon” she said and I walk away

“ Governor perform your duty on me and my children, service my body or else I will do extra marital affair thank goodness I'm have small body” she said and walk out of the room

What's the meaning of all this mess instead of her to sympathize she's here shouting about responsibility, don't let me say I regret marrying her

Swan pov

I spent hours in the dark room weeping profusely, my head hurt like hell, the door will be locked as usual, I wanna see my father and ask him if those allegation leveled against him true or false

“ Swan we need to be strong for yourself and for those that betrayed” I muttered, I gather up my strength and stood, I walk over to the door and touch the knob, the door open

He did not locked the door, why??

“ Swan this is your time to escape” my subconscious mind said and I tip toe out of the room, I went to the main door and I try opening it, it's locked already

“ Swan it's useless trying” I muttered as I walk away, I was about to enter the dark room when I heard the sound of a utensils

I trace the sound and I find myself in front of the kitchen, I saw Shadow wearing an apron as he dice an onions

“ Excuse me” I said and he face me still dicing an onions but he suddenly stop and take his lip in, I glance at the onions and I saw blood on his finger, he's bleeding

“ Hey are you okay” I said as I rush to his side, he push me away and I move closer to him

“ Let me see it” I said

“ No get away” he said coldly and I glance at him, I caught him staring at me

“ Just let me see it, forget the hatred you have for me” I said and touch his finger, he shiver under my touch and I chuckled

“ Don't shiver” I said as I drag him to the sink and rinse his bleeding finger

I use my clean white top to clean his finger and I could feel his eyes on me

“ You hate me and torture anyhow you like but I just can't watch you get hurt” I said

“ You're too nice and it's not good” he said softly

“ I can't just help it but I believe I get this niceness from my mother” I said

“ Your mother was a nice woman when she was alive but your father took her niceness for granted” he said as we remain in that same position, I held his finger then glance at him

“ Do you know why I did not hit you earlier?” he asked and I nod

“ Why don't you tell me”

“ You reminded of someone, your pleading face and hair reminded me of her”

“ Who??”

“ Thank you” he mouthed and walk away, I followed him and he take the knife, I snatch it away from him

“ What are you doing?? Are you planning to stab me”

“ I'm not a killer like you even tho you won't tell me who I reminded you of” I said and push side way and start dicing the onions for him

“ Not like that” he said and I glance at him

“ Maybe I should just leave it” I said and I was about to walk away when he stood at my back and rest his jaw on my shoulder

I could feel my heart beating fast, faster than the normal pace and I'm sure he will definitely hear, he held my hand with the knife as I could feel his breathe fanning my neck

Swan get yourself together, he's an assassin, I glance at him and I could see him focused on the onions

His black hair with black eye color with pink lip, his well shaped jaw with a pointed nose

“ Are you done accessing your father's enemy” he said and I hastily drop the knife and move away from him

“ I'm sorry, it was a mistake, I did not mean to check you out” I said rushing my words, I was about to run out when he held my hand firmly

He drag me back to himself and my hand and Boobs rest on his broad chest

“ Where are you going to??”

“ Please don't kill me” I said.

“ I'm not killing you, finish what you started”

“ Huh!!”

“ Cook the food” he said

“ I don't know how to cook, I never tried it before”

“ Cook it or I cut your wrist or your....” he trailed as his eyes land on something, I trace it and I caught him staring at me my Boobs, he smirk at me

“ It will be nice tasting those unripe oranges but don't worry I don't eat premature fruit” he said

Is he really saying my Boobs is unripe and premature then why is he still staring at it

I made a mistake by entering this kitchen, I should have just stay in the dark room

7

(Tripping for danger...)

Shadow pov

“ Do it” I said coldly and she glance at me then glance at the diced onions

“ What do you want to eat?” she asked lowly and I slowly take my lip in

“ Kimchi fried rice with chicken” I replied and she scratch her hair biting her small pink lip

“ I don't know how to cook, just cut my wrist like you did earlier in the day” she said

“ Sit and watch” I said and walk away to take the chicken from fridge, I brought it and wash it then add seasoning to it

I hate her father for what he did to me, he abused his power and think he can go scot-free, he committed a great sin and

plan to escape the punishment, I glance back and I saw her stamping her nails on the table staring at the onions

“ Don't feel happy cause I'm acting nice to you, your torture still Continue tomorrow” I said and she slowly nod, her eyes become misty

I hastily prepare the food and after one hour I was done, I dish the food the kimchi fried rice into two glass plates then dish the chicken into another glass plates

“ Let me help you to drop it on the table” she said as she stood

“ Just sit on that stool like a log of wood”

She sat down back and nod, her eyes are always misty, I went to drop the food on the dining table with a jar of water, there's a glass cup on the table

“ Swan....” I called and she hastily ran out from the kitchen

“ Do you need anything??, Can I go back to the dark room” she said

“ Seat and have dinner” she glance at me then glance at the food before sitting down

We ate in silence and I keep glancing at her at every interval, I wanted to hit her earlier today but my body could barely when I saw her crying heavily

This is not the first time I'm gonna hit her nor see her crying but today, I saw something on her face, the dying face and tears that was on chaewon face before she died

I could not bring my hand up to hit her, the urge to hit her keep increasing but my heart is not agreeing to it,,,,,I ate my food in silence but not really in silence cause I could hear someone whimpering, I glance around and my eyes move to her there I saw her crying

“ Hey why are you crying?”

“ I'm scared you are gonna kill me that's why you are acting nice” Swan said as she stare at me, I stare at her and I could see that fear in her eyes

“ Just eat your food and when you are done go back to the dark room” I said as I stood and walk away, I climb the stairs then glance back, I saw her crying as she eat the chicken

“ She look cute” I muttered as I chuckled, I went to room, I enter the room and I met Haeun sleeping as she roll on the bed

“ Shadow what's your next plan?” I muttered, I gently lay on the bed and cross my leg

“ What should I do with her?”

I roll on the bed then close my eyes to sleep, Shadow you need rest so you can tease the governor tomorrow, I keep rolling as I find it difficult to sleep

“ Why can't I get a sleep” I muttered, I get down from the bed then went downstairs and I saw Swan coming out from the kitchen, immediately she saw me she knelt on the floor and start crying

“ Please don't kill me I was cleaning the dirty dish, I know you said I should go to the dark room but I feel I should clean the dirty dish for you” she said and I slap my forehead immediately

“ You're so dramatic, are you really this scared of me”

“ Please don't kill me, I wanna see my father alive” she said

“ Just stand up, few days ago you were acting stubborn and now you are acting like a premature baby” I said then held her hand, I drag her to the living room

I made her sit on the white couch next to me and she shift away, I move closer to her and she keep shifting till there's no space, till her back hit the arm chair

“ Now enter the couch” I said and she look away, I brought my face closer to her face and she move her face sideway

“ Why are you moving backward??. I don't eat human being so stop running” I said and she look away, I could see fear in her eyes, I have install fear in her body

“ You are acting nice to me in the next hour you are gonna be violent, stop confusing my emotions” she said lowly as her eyes become misty

“ You enjoy crying” I said and she move down, she sit on the floor and crawl away

“ Swan...” I called and she hastily stood and run to the dark room, she enter the room and close the door

I sit down back on the couch and breathe out closing my eyes, I heard the sound of footsteps and I open my eyes to see Sullivan staring at me

“ You can't sleep right??” I said and he nod

“ Vinci I saw everything that happened, why are you confusing everyone?”

“ I just don't know, i have that urge to hit her earlier today but I could not, I keep seeing Alice face”

“ So that's why you are trying to act nice” he said and I raise my eyebrow

“ I'm not acting nice”

“ You cooked for her and you sat very close to her, she's even scared of you” he said

“ What do you want??”

“ You're all over the news, Shadow the wild assassin killing top politicians” he said

“ Is that the main topic of the news?” I asked

“ Yes, you're everywhere, some are supporting your killing while some are dissenting it” he said and I twitch my lip

“ Any mission?” I asked

“ It's a trap so I ignored it” he said and I nod

“ You're so smart” I said and he smiled happily

“ Finally you are admitting” he said and jump on me, he wrap his hands around my neck and I wear a stern face thinking he's gonna leave alone instead he tighten the hug

“ Sullivan...” I called coldly

“ Vinci Hwang” he said smiling

Garam pov

I get down from the car then enter the hospital holding my bag, I went straight to the doctor changing room, I change my clothes into the uniform, I pack my hair up in a ponytail

The door open widely and I glance at it, I saw Cassie entering the room holding a bottle of water

“ Swears this work is tiring” Cassie said as she fall on the couch that's in the dressing room

“ What do you mean??”

“ They just rushed Linco the man aspiring for the post of a president” she replied

“ What happen to him?”

“ That wild assassin has killed him as usual, the man died even after removing the bullets from his body” she said and I sigh

“ Really??

Advertisement

How many bullet do you find there?”

“ Just three, two on his chest and one on his forehead” she replied

“ This is serious”

“ He's all over the news, he's wanted everywhere and I even heard that he kidnap the governor's daughter, he's really suffering the girl” she said

“ Are you sure of what you are saying?”

“ The governor confirmed it that Shadow kidnapped his daughter so now he's begging the citizens to help him out” she replied

“ This is serious”

“ Really, that man is scary, no one knows whose the next target” she said

“ Are you scared??” I asked and she glance at me

“ I'm really scared, to go out in the night is really a problem for me” she replied and I smiled, I bet she's gonna faint if she finds out I'm staying in the same house with Shadow

The door open and our eyes move to the door, I saw Tee entering the room holding a notepad

“ Garam your home address, the hospital wanna send a package to you” Tee said and I glance at him

“ My home address is not stable, I stay in an hotel” I said and he glance at me

“ Really??” Cassie said and I glance at her

“ I change hotel everytime”

“ Why don't you settle down in a house” Tee said and I glance at him

“ Very soon” I said and he nod

“ So how will they deliver the package?”

“ Deliver it to my office” I said and he nod then walk away

“ Will you squat with me?” Cassie asked

“ No it's fine”

“ Garam you can't keep wasting your money on hotel” she said

“ I'm planning on going to my cousin's house or rent an apartment...” I said and she nod

“ Garam if you need anything, just let me know okay??” she said and I nod smiling

“ How was the surgery?” I asked

“ It was okay” she replied as we both walk out of the changing room, I adjust my diamond wristwatch before putting my hands back into the trouser pocket

“ This night duty is gonna be hectic” she said and I glance at her, we pass through the OPD section and we saw the patients eyes glued to the screen, our eyes follow the screen and we saw video of Shadow murdering Linco

Shadow did this video internationally, he sending a message out

“ I did not just kill him without a reason, this guy is a pedophile, they sleep with young girls promising them to give them scholarship he sent me to kill his fellow man” Shadow said as he play the conversation between him and Linco

What's his aim?? What is he trying to do now?? Why is he trying to complicate things

“ Linco is a dangerous man”

“ Death serve him right”

“ If you notice it, Shadow is only kill those politicians because their hands are clean”

“ Let's make Shadow our hero, this Linco once tried to rape me”

“ But killing those politicians is not right, he should have hand them over to the police”

“ Are you okay?? The police are definitely gonna release them, they have control over the police”

Those were the words I heard from the patients as they watch the news

“ This Shadow man is scary, this man is just dealing with top politicians” Cassie said

“ He's putting an end to bad government” I said

“ I have never heard a news about him killing people that are not involved in politics” Cassie said

“ Let's sit and watch the news, the shift is yet to start” I muttered and we sat at the back as we watch the News

The news show a picture of Swan “ A new update from her kidnapper” that's the title of the news

I watch the video with keen interest as Shadow hit Swan repeatedly “ Mr governor come out and confess your sin or your daughter will keep suffering” Shadow said and the video end

The video is old, it's not a recent video cause I remember she wore a new clothe today

“ Garam the killing is wild” Cassie said and I nod, I glance around and I saw three nurses with a doctor running over to my side

“ Hey Garam you are here since, come and pack Linco dead body” Bose said and the patients glance at us

“ Cassie let's go” I said as we walk out of the OPD section

“ Cassie prepare the stretcher, we're taking him to morgue” I said and she walk away passing another direction

I enter the ward and I saw three nurses standing beside a body

“ Is that his body?” I asked and they nod

Cassie came back with a stretcher and we carry his body and drop it on the stretcher, I wheel the stretcher with Cassie as we went to the morgue that's in the 6th floor

The elevator door open and we step out from the elevator, I open the first door then push the stretcher in, we enter the room and I open one of free closet

I unlock the door and push his body there I saw holes in his body

“ This is horrible, I'm definitely gonna have nightmare” Cassie said and I chuckled

“ No sleep tonight” I said and close the door, we walk out from the room and I lock the door, we enter the elevator heading to the 1st floor

“ This doctor job is scary” she said

“ You know we're just an intern but don't worry next month we're gonna be boss of our own” I said and she smiled

“ I really can't wait”

The elevator door open and we step out from the elevator

Swan pov

I rub my eyes as I yawn, I roll on the floor till my back hit something

“ Ouch!” I sat upright and glance back, I saw a rod

“ Damn it, I hit back my back on that rod” I muttered, I stood and check the time, thank goodness that light is on

It's just 8am, my mind glance back at what happened yesterday night and I laughed like a fool

He enjoy confusing my emotions but I kinda like his sweet side but I'm still scared of him

The door open and I glance at the door, I saw Garam staring at me as she yawn

“ You're awake, come and have your bath and change your clothe” she said and yawn again

“ Are you okay?” I asked with concern

“ Just tired, stressed out” she said and walk away leaving door open, I step out from the room and flinch when I saw Shadow standing in front of me

“ Couch girl” he said as he glared at me then walk away

He's scary, this is why I'm scared of him, always wearing a scary face

“ Follow me” Garam said and I followed her, we climb the stairs and enter a room

“ Use this room, I will get your clothe” she said and walk away yawning, I enter the room then glance around

The room is beautiful, I strip myself then enter the bathroom, I turn the shower and shiver under the water

The water is cold, I take a soap and apply it on my body, I wash my body thoroughly and soon I was done bathing

I step out from the bathroom tying a white towel, I startled when I saw Shadow in the room staring at me drinking a can beer, he check me out from head to toe then smirk

“ This is my room so leave” he said

“ I'm sorry I did not know”

“ Leave and when you are going drop my towel” he said and I widened my eyes

“ My body”

“ What are you hiding, is those premature fruits that I have seen and touch” he said smirking

“ Can I say something” I said as I breathe out, I close my eyes for a sec then open it back

“ You wanna cry as usual” he said and I look away biting my lips, I face him back

“ Stop confusing me, if you wanna hurt me just kill me and if you wanna act nice show me that sweet side of you”

“ Kim Swan” he called

“ Tell me my father's sins and I will see if I should believe you or not, stop hurting me I'm a lady”

He stood and come closer to me, he's very close that I could feel his breathe

“ What about I do another practical of what your father did to chaewon so you will understand better” he said coldly and pull the towel down, we stare at each other and our eyes locked

8

(Tripping for danger...)

“ What about I do another practical of what your father did to chaewon so you will understand better” Shadow said coldly and pull the towel down, they stare at each other as their eyes locked

“ You said it was once” Swan said as she gulp down, she can't believe she's stark naked in front of a monster, a monster that make her heart race faster than a cheetah

“ Not once, he did it many times, he exploit her and hit her every f**king time just like the way he did to your mother, Karina made him beat your mother every time that's why she died two weeks after giving birth to you” Shadow said as he grit his teeth and Swan lick her lower lip as she breathe out

“ That's why you are torturing me, I hate you,,,, before but no anymore cause I love the sweet side you showed me yesterday night tho I acted stupidly” Swan whispered as she pull his neck closer to herself and kiss his lip

She kiss his lip steadily and surprisingly Shadow reciprocate as he tighten his big hands round her naked waist

Vinci right hand move up to her boobs and touch the nipples, Swan shiver under his touch and hastily broke the kiss

“ I'm sorry that was a mistake, I don't know what was through my head” Swan said as she take the towel from the floor and wrap it round her body

Swan walk away, she was about to reach the door when Shadow held her hand and drag her, she fell in his arms and he devour her lip like a hungry lion

That tempting lip that's calling onto him, her wet tongue that send a weird signal to his brain

He carried her up resting his hands on her butt taking her to the bathroom, he enter the washroom and close the door immediately

Shadow drop her on the big thick tiles table that's pinned to the wall and stare at her, he glance at her lip then glance at her chest

“ What am I doing?” he muttered

“ Vinci let me in, let me see your pains I wanna study you like a book” Swan said and Shadow raise his eyebrow

“ This is a mistake” Shadow said as he was about to walk away when Swan pin him down with her legs, she wrapped it round his thigh

“ This was a mistake, you pull the towel down, you reciprocate when I kissed you and you broke my virginity” Swan said and Shadow slap his forehead as he take his lip in

“ What do you want??”

“ Tell me everything that happened, I'm ready to listen to you”
Swan said and he look away

“ You're getting bold, clean yourself up” Shadow said and he try
to remove her legs away from his thigh but it was not easy
cause Swan tighten it

“ Swan...” he called coldly and Swan hastily remove her legs

Shadow walk out of the washroom and Swan stare at his back
view

“ What did you just do, you kissed him and face him boldly gosh
Swan have you forgotten your place” Swan muttered as she
slap her forehead

She get down from the table and walk out from the washroom,
she saw no one in the room but she saw clothes on the bed

A black short that reach her knees with a white tank top, she
wear the clothe then check herself in the mirror

She look like a guy, she touch her chest and smiled

“ You're gonna get out of here alive” she muttered,

Swan turn around and walk out from the room, she went downstairs and she saw Shadow and Sullivan talking as they stare at the TV screen, she saw Haeun in a stroller playing her toys

“ Thank you for letting me out” Swan said and they glance at her

“ Your food is on the table” Shadow said coldly and she nod

Swan walk away heading to the dining room and she really saw her food there, she sit on the chair and start devouring it

Her hair almost enter the food but someone pull it back and tucked it behind her ear, she tilt her head to see Shadow staring at her with an innocent eyes

“ Vinci..”

“ Stop rushing the food, it's not running away” Shadow said icily and walk away

Swan pov

I drop the chopstick and stare at his back view, he's cute even with that scary face

He came back with a bottle of water and walk past me without saying anything, I resume eating my food and soon I was done eating,,,I take the dirty dish to the kitchen and wash it

Then I use the opportunity to check the kitchen very well, the kitchen is big just like my kitchen and it's sparkling neat, he's looks rich but why is he an assassin?

I went back to the living room and I met them talking, I wonder what they're talking about??

“ Are you not gonna video me today like you use to do” I said and Sullivan glance at me then glance at Shadow who just wear the hoodie cap without glancing back

“ Not today” Sullivan replied chuckling and I nod, I walk away heading to the dark room, I was about to open the door when I heard a voice

“ You can stay here but don't talk” I heard his cold voice and I glance back to see him drinking water

“ Thank you” I mouthed and I nod

Smiling, I went to his side and sat next to him and he glance at me

“ Move away” he said and I made the O sound, I hastily sit on the floor and hold my knees resting my jaw on my kneecap

“ Can you tell me why you said my father is a bad man” I said and I got no response

“ He's a pedophile, he enjoys using scholarship to exploit female teens” Sullivan said and I glance at him

“ You said something about Karina, how is she behind my Mom's death?”

“ Karina and your Mom are best friend so your father is having extra marital affairs with Karina” Shadow said

“ Karina speak ill about her, she poisoned his mind about your Mom so he start hitting her everytime, even after childbirth he continue hitting her” Sullivan said

“ He's an animal, I hate him” Shadow said.

“ How long will I keep paying for his sins?”

“ Till I'm satisfied” Shadow replied

“ Then why don't you tell me what my father did to Chaewon”

“ Story for another so keep quiet” he said coldly and I look away

I felt someone hand on my arm and I tilt my head to see Haeun giggling

“ You're beautiful” I said and she smiled, she point at Shadow then point at me

“ Do you need anything?” I asked and she just stare at me smiling

I carried her from the stroller and made her rest her head on my Boobs, her right hand rest on my second Boobs

“ Pretty girl”

Shadow pov

Sullivan gesture at me to stare at something and I trace his hand, I saw Haeun closing her eyes as she rest on Swan Boobs
Her hand rest on it and I chuckled, she's even sleeping

“ Weird bond”

I chuckled as I stood and Sullivan drop the iPad on the table

“ Take her to the room” I said and Swan glance at me

“ Are you talking to me??” she asked innocently

“ Just follow me, Sullivan check the securities there to see if it's tight or not before we step out” I said and he nod, I went upstairs with Swan

Garam is in her room sleeping, she look stressed out

I enter the room and pave way for her to enter with the baby, immediately she enter I close the door

“ Just drop her on the bed and use the pillow to cover the both side so she won't roll off”

Swan gently drop her on the bed and use the pillow to cover both side just like I have instructed

“ Your baby is cute” she said and I rolled my eyeballs, I was about to walk away when she held my hand

“ Why are you not telling me anything?? I need to know my father's offense so I can know if I should love his enemy or not” she said and I raise my eyebrow

Love me???

What's she talking about???

“ What are you saying?”

“ Nevermind” she replied and walk away, I drag her back,,,, she mistakenly push me and we both fell on the bed

My hand rest round her waist and I could feel her breathe as she's on top

“ This is crazy” she muttered and I chuckled

“ Why are you suddenly nice?, You're not violent like before??”

“ I'm taking her advice serious, I don't wanna die so I have to act nice to you and I'm also curious to know what happened” she replied

“ Swan I don't have the intention to kill you, I just want to torture you so your father will feel the pain I'm passing through” I said and she force a smile on her face

“ We're both passing through pains, Aldo cheated on me, it's not enough for him he have the gut to send you to kill me, I can't believe Juran could have that thought of ending my life” she said and I could see that pain and sincerity in her eyes

We are passing through pains, she has own pains that she's passing through and the governor is the cause of everything

“ Should I reach them a lesson?” she chuckled as she look away

“ Your father is the cause of everything, if only he's fair and smart in his decision making and if only he's not a pedophile, we won't meet” I said and she was about to stand up when I tighten my hand round her waist

“ I need to stand, don't confuse me” she said

“ How I'm I confusing you?”

“ You're playing with my emotions, you will act nice and in the next five minutes you are gonna be cold towards me” she said and I release my hand from her small waist

“ You can stand if you want” I said and she look away, we stayed in that position for minutes as everywhere become silent

“ Vinci I'm pressed” she said and I let go of her, she stood and hastily enter the washroom

Shadow what's wrong with you, control yourself remember she's your enemy daughter

“ I don't wanna love her, I'm a monster and she doesn't deserve me” I muttered as I sit upright, I rub my eyes and I could hear the sound of water as if someone is flushing

The door open and I saw Swan coming out from the washroom, her smooth short legs that's spotless, no hair on it

“ I'm back” she said lowly as she look away

“ You don't deserve me so don't love me”

“ Why do you say so??” she asked

“ I'm a monster, I treat you badly and I even had s€x with you forcefully so why should you love me and again I'm your father's enemy”

“ Shadow I choose who I want to love, if I love you accept it and if I don't love you accept it” she said and walk out of the room

Juran pov

I step out from his washroom stark naked cleaning my hair with a towel

“ You never tell me you are this sweet, my stupid sister is really enjoying” I said and Aldo chuckled

“ We've never have s€x, she's always giving me one flimsy excuse if I wanna touch her” he replied

“ Stop lying”

“ Juran I'm serious” he said and I climb the bed and mount on him

“ Is anything going on between you and Beaver, I'm suspecting something”

“ Babe trust me nothing is going on

I'm yours alone” he said and I look away

“ You're back again with your sweet words, you ignore me whenever you come to my house infact you hardly pick my calls nor reply my message, you only call when you are in the mood, I'm I your bed warmer or what??”

“ You're not my bed warmer, it's just that I have been busy with work and Swan case, I have to play the role of a victim you know” he said

“ Beaver told me she's behind the kidnapping, do you know about it??”

“ Not at all, I'm just hearing for the first time” he said as he plant a wet kiss on my lip

I slowly reciprocate and I don't know when he slide his phallus into my slippery hole

“ Mm Aldo” I moaned and he kiss my neck

“ Ride it” he said and I smiled, I twist my butt round his phallus while his hand rest on my Boobs squeezing it like his life depends on it

I whine waist slowly moaning and he suck my Boobs, I rest my head on his broad chest and his hands land on my butt

He move butt hard on his phallus and I moaned loud, the sound of skin jamming hard can be heard cause he was pretty fast

“ A...Al..... Aldo” I moaned his name and he groan loudly, he push me off his body as he stand

He drag me up to the wall, I stood resting my back on the wall and he carry my left leg up resting it on his shoulder as he thrust it in deeply

He went deeper and faster, I screamed when I felt hitting my womb

“ Womb shifter” I moaned and he moaned

“ F**k you are sweet, squirt for me baby” he said and we both release at the same time

He kiss my lip wetly and I smiled “ Best s€x ever” he muttered and I smiled

“ You're finally admitting that I'm better than those bitçhes you carry around in the club” I said and push him on the bed then enter the washroom

I wash my body and wash his sperm off my body, after bathing I came out from the washroom and dress up wearing a yellow

jumpsuit that brought out my shape, I brought out a contraceptive pill from my bag and take it

Aldo get down from the bed and hug me from behind as I wear my heels sitting on the foam stool

“ Are you leaving?” he said

“ I have to leave so you can bring those bitches in” I replied

“ Juran trust me I'm not cheating on you” he said

“ Aldo I know you more than yourself, you're the king of players and a player can never change”

“ Juran trust me” he said

“ Don't tell me nothing is going on between you and Beaver”

“ Swears, nothing is going on” he replied

“ I know that's what you are gonna say, baby boo see you later” I said and kiss his cheek then walk out of his room carrying my handbag, I step out from his Mansion and enter my car

The gate open and I drive out of his compound, I drive out of his compound and not long I glance through the side mirror and saw Beaver car entering his compound

Like I know, something is going on between them, bunch of cheaters

I went straight to the Mansion and spend the rest of my day there

Later in night ***

Swan pov

I spent the rest of the day in the dark room after walking out on him in the morning, I spent the day sleeping, crying, thinking bout' my life

Once he release me, I promise to go and teach those betrayer a good lesson that they will never forget

And father, I'm disappointed in him, I chose him as my role model not knowing he's a monster, he hardly talk about my

mom and whenever I bring the topic up his expression will just change

Shadow is right, he's a monster but part of me want to believe it and another part of me does not want to believe it

“ Swan you are confused” I muttered as I stood and glance round the room, I went to the door and open it

The door open and I peep my head out, I saw no one in the living room, I step out

“ Where are you going to?” I heard that deep and I startled as I fell on the floor hitting my butt hard

“ Hey stop sneaking around” I yelled and move closer to me tilting his head

“ Did you just yell at me” he said coldly

“ I'm sorry about that” I said immediately and bow at him

“ Whatever” he mouthed and walk away

“ Where's your wife, the lady I saw this morning” I said as I stood and follow him

“ Firstly she's not my wife and secondly why are you asking about her?”

“ I just wanna know” I muttered

.

“ It's not good to know everything” he said and face me immediately, our body collide together and my heart start beating fast

He glance at my lip then glance at my Boobs, he chuckled and walk away,,,, he went to sit on the couch

“ Why were you staring at my lip, wait don't tell me you are thinking about that kiss” I said and he scattered his hair

“ Shut up”

“ No no no don't tell me shut up, answer my question, are you still thinking...” he shut me up with a kiss, he plant his wet tongue into my mouth as he devour my lip hungrily, I slowly reciprocate and he pull off immediately

“ Just shut up and stop talking the time is 12am” he said and look away

I bite my lip in happiness as I smiled, I lick my lower lip in delight, his lip is dreamy

“ Just can't believe I spent the whole day in the dark room” I said

“ Well that's because you feel like” he said

“ No Vinci you are not getting me, why's today super fast and the kiss, are you interested in me”

“ Swan you talk too much” he said coldly and I frown my face

“ Are you interested in me?? Should I love you??”

“ Swan just stop talking about love” he said

“ No no no Vinci you ar.....” he shut me up with a kiss, a deep kiss and I widened my eyes

He kiss my cheek and whisper “ Please stop talking” he whispered

“ Why are we whispering?” I whispered

“ It's late in the night” he whispered and I heard a loud cry

“ Wait I think your baby is crying” I said as I stood and ran upstairs, he followed me

I enter the room and I saw Haeun crying heavily, I carried her and she keep crying

“ Let me have her” Shadow said and I gave him the baby, he carried her and we walk out of his room there we saw Sullivan walking past us

“ F**k I told him to stop sleep walking” Vinci said and I glance at him, he move closer to Sullivan and shout in his ear

Sullivan open his eyes immediately jumping and I laughed, Haeun is still crying, I wonder what's wrong

We went downstairs and Shadow sit on the couch petting Haeun, her cry did not stop instead it increase

“ What's wrong with her?” Sullivan asked and I glance at him

“ No one knows” I replied

“ Let Swan carry her first, you know she's a lady” Sullivan said and Vinci nodge at me to come closer, I sat next to him on the couch and he gently drop Haeun on my arm

I check her diapers, it's neat

“ Have she eaten?” I asked

“ Yes I just don't know what's wrong” Vinci said

Her body is hot, like really hot “ Get room temperature water with towel” I said and Sullivan walk away

“ What do you wanna use it to do?” Shadow asked

“ She's running temperature” I replied and he sigh

“ Don't worry she's gonna be mine” I said and he rolled his pretty eyeballs

I check her mouth and I saw teeth growing, wait is she feeling pains there, I gently take one of her fingers and rest it on her growing teeth, immediately her cry increase

“ Hey what did you do to my daughter” Vinci said

“ Her teeth about to grow that's why she's crying, she's feeling pains there so I will advice you to take her to the hospital” I said and he sigh heavily

“ Can you stop the cry?” he asked

“ I will try to”

Sullivan came back with the bowl and towel, I soak the towel inside the water and squeeze it, I use the water to clean her body and her cry reduce, I clean her face and visible body

After cleaning her body, I carried her and move around stroking her back, her cry reduce

I sit back on the couch and carried her in that same position

Vinci glance at her and he saw sleeping, not deeply and he chuckled

“ Sullivan carry Haeun upstairs” I said and he nod rubbing his eyes

He gently carry Haeun and take her upstairs, I carry Swan in a bridal style and she hold onto me with her eyes closed

What's she doing to me??

Sullivan enter the room and gently drop Haeun on the bed, he went out of the room rubbing his eyes

“ Sleep tight” I said and he nod

He's still feeling sleepy, he enjoys sleeping like a pregnant woman

I gently lay her on the bed next to Haeun and I was about to stand when she pulled me back, our face are close

“ Shadow is scary, I hate him because he's not letting me in, I want to understand his pains” she said

“ If I let you in you're gonna end up falling for me and I don't want that to happen, I don't want love to overpower my revenge, I'm scared of that” I said and she pout her lip sweetly pulling me close

“ He doesn't want me to love him, what if I break the wall that's stopping him from reaching out to me” she said and I glance at her lip

Wait don't tell me she sleep talk like Sullivan, geez

“ You can't break that wall, the revenge is the wall so you can't break it” I said

“ Stop confusing me, are you interested in me?”

“ That's my worst fear” I said and she open her eyes immediately

“ Why is it your worst fear??” she said and I was about to move away from her when she pin me down with her hand

“ So you were not sleeping” I said and she nod smiling

“ I woke up when you carried me, so tell me why is love your worst fear” she said

“ We can't be together and the kiss was a mistake”

“ My lip is expensive so you can't just kiss it and tell me it's a mistake, never!” she said

“ What do you want??”

“ You, tell me your pains” she said

“ Swan sleep or else I will shoot you” I said coldly hoping she's gonna fall for it

“ I know you can't do it so there's no need of threatening me” she said

“ Swan...”

She kiss my lip passionately and I can't help it but reciprocate

“ This for saving your daughter” she said

“ Okay no more kisses, I don't wanna be soft” I said and she kiss my lip again smiling

She's stubborn

9

(Tripping for danger...)

She kiss my lip passionately and I can't help it but reciprocate

“ This for saving your daughter” she said

“ Okay no more kisses, I don't wanna be soft” I said and she kiss my lip again smiling

“ Swan....” I called and she pull me closer, I fell on her and she smiled

“ I kinda like today” She said smiling

“ Why???”

“ Well cause it's filled with kiss as if we're doing a kissing game” she replied

“ Swan I wanna stand”

“ Mmm mmm not yet” Swan said as she pull me more closer and we roll on the bed, now she's on top, I glance at my left hand side and saw Haeun sleeping peacefully

“ Haeun is here, I wanna get down so I can sleep”

“ No we're sleeping like this” she said and I chuckled unknowingly

“ You're joking”

She sat upright and her hands rest on my waist moving close to my belt, she stare at my belt for a while then stare at me

“ Vinci how are you feeling?” she asked and I just stare at her with a blank mind

“ Say something” she added

“ What are you talking about?”

“ Chaewon your wife, tell me more what happened” she replied

“ She's my sister not my wife”

“ Where's her mother?” she asked as she glance at Haeun

“ Alice, she died immediately after childbirth” I replied and she nod

“ Sorry about that” she said and I chuckled

Swan roll off from my body and lay on the bed, I face her and she use the duvet to cover our body, she face me then move closer resting her hand on my cheek

“ Try to smile often cause it suit you than this stern face” she said and I blink my eyes

“ You talk too much, go and sleep”

“ Vinci I'm sleeping here for tonight, I don't want the kissing game to end now” she said

“ We're not doing any kissing game and again we're in the midnight” I said and smiled, she slowly lift right leg and rest it on my waist then kiss my well shaved jaw

“ Let's sleep like this” Swan said as she rest my hand on her right leg

“ You're wild and bold” I said and she giggled

“ You don't like it??” she asked

“ Show that boldness to your family that's not perfect” I replied and she smiled

“ Don't worry your revenge will work out well” Swan said as she remove her right leg and back me shooting her perfect butt, I pull her closer and her butt hit my phallus hard, my hands held her waist firmly

“ Vinci what are you doing?” she asked innocently

“ Just trying to sleep” I replied and I could see her grinning from ear to ear

She tilt her neck and kiss my lip sweetly, I smiled at her action

“ Is it okay, do you like it?” she said and I smiled

“ You're wild, I want more” I said and she kiss my lip again

“ Wild assassin that's requesting for more” she said and I chuckled, she face front and I kiss her neck then whisper

“ You want me, hope you know that I'm a wild assassin just like you said, can you take everything in and you won't complain, can you stand my attitude”

“ I don't want the same mistake that I did to Aldo to repeat itself” she said

“ What did you do??”

“ I did not give him any attention, no touching, he hasn't seen my nakedness” she said

“ So I was the first” I said lowly and she nod as she rub her eyes

“ Vinci I wanna sleep” she said as she face me then hug me wrapping her hands firmly on my body and I stroke her hair

“ Sweet dreams” I muttered and she nod

I slowly close my eyes and sleep, we slept in that position not minding if someone burst in, all I want right now is closeness, I cuddle her and she made the mm sound hugging me tightly

“ Are you feeling cold?” I asked and she did not reply, she's fast asleep

Crazy girl

My eyes move to tiny waist and big butt, she's really thick and well endowed

I kiss her forehead and she rest her head properly on my chest, my hand move to her tummy and I touch it

“ Ouch it's painful” Swan said as she open her eyes and her eyes become misty

“ I'm sorry about that” I said and hug her tightly, she sniff hard and I breathe out

Damn I can't believe I did that to her

She hug tightly and I stroke her soft hair gently, she whimper

“ Vinci can I say something” she said lowly and I slowly disengage from the hug as she face me

“ Can you release me, I want to see my father, I want to see my family li....”

“ No..” I interrupted her immediately and she close her eyes then move away from me

“ You're not going anywhere, you're here with me,,,,,,why are you a joy killer” I shouted! and she flinch

“ Vinci you are not getting me”

“ Is this why you are trying to be close to me so I can release you” I said raise my voice

“ Shadow you ar....”

“ Get out or instead I will leave for you and I must not see you here when I come back” I said and walk out of the room

I went to the pool side, on my way to the pool side I take a cigarette with lighter, I got to the pool side and lit the cigarette

“ F**k I hate her” I muttered as smoke come out from my nose and mouth

“ So that's the reason why she has been acting nice since morning” I muttered

Swan pov

“ I made a mistake by telling him that” I muttered, I just want to see my Dad, he even tho he's a bad man just like they said, that doesn't mean I should disown

Now that things to smooth between us, I went to ruin it, I get down from the bed and went downstairs

When I got downstairs I saw a door opened, perfect escape, I rush to the door and pass through it and I find myself in the swimming pool

I saw Shadow smoking heavily as he sit on the chair that's in front of the pool, wait I thought this is the front door that lead me outside but I guess I'm wrong

Vinci, I watch as he smoke heavily and I sigh heavily, I made him angry without knowing

Why is he not ready to release me??

“ Shadow....” I called and he ignored me

Don't tell me he's still angry

“ Vinci...” I called again and he ignored me

Advertisement

I take a step forward and continue moving forward till I reach his side

“ I'm sorry, I shouldn't have said that but seriously I don't have that intention in mind” he glance at me

“ Say something” I said and he ignored me

“ Are you still angry??”

“ Swan leave here this minute” he said coldly

Now he's back to his cold attitude, if he's not ready to give me any attention then I will make him beg for my attention

I slowly take off my top and short left alone with a gstring and a matching bra, he glance at me then look away immediately

“ Swan wear your clothe and leave” he said icily and my heart start beating fast, his cold voice send an electric fear to my body but I keep cool and act bold in front of him as if his words are not affecting me

“ Can you just allow to swim”

“ No leave” he said immediately and stood, he walk to my side and rest his hand on my shoulder, he was about to push me out when I drag him to myself and we both fell into the pool

“ Hey Swan” he shouted and I shut him up with a wet kiss, he slowly reciprocate and deepen the kiss

His back rest on the edge and let me take control of the kiss, his right hand move to the waist and tickle me there, immediately I laugh in between the kiss

Vinci slowly break the kiss and trail soft kiss on my neck then to my Boobs and I dip my hands into his hair, he kiss my Boobs and I shiver under his touch

He slowly unbuckle the bra and take it off my body then he mount on it like a wild lion

“ Mm shadow” a weird noise came out from my mouth

He left my Boobs and trail his lip to my waist, he trail kisses to my lip back and not long I felt something entering my Va***na and I glance down to see two of his fingers trapped in and I moaned biting my lip to stop the moans from escaping out

“ Let your moans out” he said as he thrust in slowly then later he become fast and my moans increase, it become loud that I fear my voice might wake them up

“ Super tight” he muttered and I held his shoulder tightly, my leg shaking as he thrust in faster

I moaned loud when I felt something thickish coming out, he bend down then shift the gstring aside, he was about to kiss my Va***na when I close my legs

“ You're gonna like it”

“ But...”

“ Trust me” he said as he kiss it and a gentle moan escape out of my mouth

He lick my clit and later he become very fast, I could not hold the pressure any more as I screamed with me pushing him to continue

He stop when something came out of my V area, he stood and brought his lip back to my lip and I taste myself

“ Nice try but it's not gonna happen today” he said and move away, he get off from the pool then carry me out

He was about to walk away when I hug him from behind

“ I'm sorry about that, I just want to see him and confirm if what you said are true or not” I said and he slowly remove my hands away from his waist

“ Later in the morning, you're gonna know the real truth so you won't make a stupid decision” he said and glance at my clothes, I hastily wear it back and he carried me inside a room next to his room

He gently lay me on the bed and kiss my forehead then use the duvet to cover my body

“ Sleep tight” he muttered and I nod

Garam pov

The next morning I enter the building and I saw Swan playing with Haeun whose hands is trapped into her mouth

“ Hey I'm back where are the boys??”

She glance at me then smiled, “ I don't know” she replied

“ What's wrong with her??”

“ Her teeth is about to grow so she's feeling pains” she replied

“ My baby is now growing up” I said smiling and she stare at me with a blank expression

“ Is she your daughter?” she asked

“ No I'm yet to get pregnant talkless of giving birth” I replied smiling

“ Oh mistake” she said

“ You said you don't know where's Shadow” I said and she nod

“ He went out with Sullivan” she replied

“ And left you alone with his daughter”

“ We talked yesterday and now he's kinda towards me, we kissed” she said and I kinda feel a tiny envy growing but I quickly wave it aside

“ If you love a guy, you won't do anything to hurt him and if he love anything, you must accept it with him so Garam get that dirty envy off your mind” my subconscious mind said and I nod

“ You said she's feeling pains in her teeth so what about I take her to the hospital” I said and she glance at me

“ Really??” she asked

“ But I can't leave you alone so you won't escape” I replied and she sigh

“ We have to wait till he comes back”

“ Have you eaten?” I asked

“ Sure, Shadow fixed something for everyone, yours is in the microwave” she replied

“ Thank you” I mouthed as I lock the door and take the keys with me

I went to my room, geez I'm so tired all thanks to the emergency and Cassie

That girl enjoys talking, I enter the room and take off my clothes, I went inside the bathroom and have a quick bath

After bathing I change my clothe into a baggy jeans with a white designer shirt, after dressing I step out of my room with my phone and key

I met them the same way I left them, a chemistry is definitely going on between her and Shadow cause the Shadow I know can never leave her alone with Haeun, I went to the kitchen and microwave the food

Few minutes later I bring out the food from the microwave and take the glass plate to the dining table, I drop it on the table and sit on the chair then start devouring the food,,,,,.I devour the food in silence and I was about to finish the food when I heard someone opening the door from outside

He's back already

The door open revealing Shadow and Sullivan face, Shadow went upstairs while Sullivan lock the door and walk over to Swan side

Soon I was done eating, after eating I went to wash the plate immediately and drop it in the plate rack, I clean my hand with a napkin then walk out of kitchen

“ Where were you going coming from?” I asked

“ We went for a mission” he replied and I nod

“ I'm taking Haeun to the hospital because of her teeth”

“ Garam is that really necessary? are you not a doctor??” he said and I rolled my eyeballs

“ Do I look like a dentist” I said and he glared at me playfully

Shadow came downstairs wearing a different clothe

“ Heyy what's going on here” he said softly with his hands trapped in his baggy trouser

“ I'm taking Haeun to the hospital because of her teeth” I said and he nod

“ That's good, should I follow you” he said and I glance at Swan whose staring at me

“ No stay at home” I said as I carry Haeun from her then walk out of the building

I unlock the door and put her in the backseat, thank goodness her small stroller is in the car, I bring out the stroller then gently drop her in stroller as I lock the seat belt

She just stare at me without smiling, I enter the driver seat and drive out of the compound

Aldo pov

“ Aldo what's that bitçh doing here” Ricky said and I glance at him

“ As you can see I just finish banging her”

“ Aldo are you cursed or what, must you bang a girl, you are banging your fiancée sister and friend and you are not satisfied yet” he said and I rolled my eyeballs

“ Why are you lecturing me on what to do with my life”

“ You're here banging a girl won't you think of a way to rescue your fiancée” he said

“ Ricky forget about her”

“ That sweet girl” he said

“ She's not sweet, she's stingy” I said and he sit on the bed resting his jaw on his wrist

“ Mr player how's she stingy?” he asked

“ She never allowed me to touch her, I'm yet to see her nakedness and yet she allowed that bastard assassin to have a taste of her honeypot”

“ Oh really so are you jealous” he said

“ Ricky I'm her fiancée and I have every f**king right to see her nakedness and not him”

“ So now you know how to yell, you know how it feels when you are sleeping with other girls” he said

“ Why are you negative, your reply is not supportive”

“ So I should support your bad character” he said and I nod

“ Ricky I'm your friend”

“ Have heard you” he said

“ So as I was saying, can you believe that bastard have s€x with my fiancée”

“ Aldo are you hurt” he said

“ Yes it's painful and heartbreaking”

“ Do you love her?” he asked

“ Not at all” I replied sharply

“ Then why are you angry?” he asked

“ Are you mocking me” I said

“ Mocking you is a waste of time” he sat

“ Your father-in-law is gonna award the person that will catch Shadow with 250 million won” he added and I widened my eyes

“ Are you sure?”

“ The man that's stealing the citizens rights” he replied

“ I must win that cool cash” I said

“ Why are you desperate and confusing” he said and I rolled my eyeballs

“ Ricky can you follow me to the Kim Manson”

“ It's not only follow, it's followers on Instagram, I seriously can't wait for the person that will cut off that your prick” he said as he stood and walk out of the room

Is this a friend or what??

❖ WILD

(Tripping for danger...)

SHADOW'S MANSION ***

They all watch as Garam walk out of the house, Shadow glance at Swan then walk away, he went back to his room

When he reach the end of the stairs, he glance at her one more time before walking away

Swan sigh as she stood, she was about to walk when Sullivan drag her down and her butt hit the couch

“ Do you need anything?” Swan asked innocently and Sullivan take his lip in, he glance at the stairs then glance back at her

“ Is anything going on between you and him?” Sullivan said

“ Who are you talking about?” Swan asked innocently and Sullivan twitch his lip

“ Why are you acting naive” he said and she chuckled

“ Oh you were talking about him” she said

“ Answer my question” Sullivan said coldly as he glance at her

“ Well we're just friends nothing is attach to it” she replied and Sullivan close his eyes with his palm then drop his hands down

“ I saw you guys kissing this midnight but I turn a blind eyes to it, I sleep walk but the one that happened this morning was fake” he said

“ Okay in a nutshell what are you trying to say??”

“ What's your aim??, Are you seducing him so he can leave you alone or you love him, which one” Sullivan said and Swan chuckled

“ If I'm seducing him what are you gonna do about that or is it now crime to love an assassin” Swan said smiling

“ Don't act stupid and if you know your intention is not pure then don't make him fall in love with you” Sullivan said as he stood, he was about to walk away when Swan held his hand and stand

“ If my intentions are bad I would have escape since morning and Sullivan why are you putting on a different attitude”

“ Don't hurt him like the way your father did if you don't wanna face my wrath” Sullivan said as he yank her hand off his wrist and walk away

“ What does he take me as” Swan muttered as she stare at his back view

She followed him to the kitchen, Sullivan open the fridge and Swan close it back

“ Why are you acting cold today??” Swan asked and he chuckled

“ Let me ease the tension” he said and push her slightly, he push her aside as he open the fridge

He brought a bottle water and walk out of the kitchen drinking it

“ Say something” Swan said as she followed him

“ Have reply you already” Sullivan said as enter the pool, he walk past the water then went to sit on the chair staring at the water

“ Sullivan you are yet to say anything”

“ You talk too much” he said and Swan sit on the chair next to him

“ I don't talk too much, I'm just asking you a question” Swan said

“ He really need to tame that mouth of yours” Sullivan said, he glance up and he saw Shadow staring at him through his room transparent wall

Their eyes locked and Sullivan look away, he drink his water and Swan snatch the bottle water from him

“ Hey I'm talking to you” Swan said

“ Give me back the bottle” Sullivan said and Swan throw the bottle at him

“ Listen to me” Swan said

“ No you talk too much” Sullivan said

“ I'm not gonna hurt him if that's making you get worked up, I just need time to think about the decision I wanna make” Swan said and Sullivan glance at her without saying anything

Shadow enter the pool and met them talking, he chuckled when he saw Swan cute face as she talk to Sullivan

“ You talk too much” Shadow said and they glance at him

“ Tame her mouth that's running fast without control” Sullivan said and walk away

Swan glance at him then look away “ About what happened yesterday” Shadow said

“ It's was a mistake, I was not seducing you” Swan said

“ Swan I never said you were seducing me” Shadow said, he stood in front of her folding his arm

“ He's getting the wrong impression about me” she said and he glance at the door

“ He's having a hunch about you that's why” Shadow said

“ What's the hunch?” Swan asked and Shadow sit on the chair next to her without replying

“ Say something” she said as she face him, his eyes move to her face then her lip

“ Forget what I said” he said and Swan nod her head

“ Don't tell me to forget about it” she said

Swan pov

“ Swan forget about what I said” he said and I get off the chair and went to kneel next to him

“ Are you having a hunch about me” I asked and he just stare at me without saying anything

“ Say something” I said and he brought his face closer to mine then take my lip in

He peck my lip smiling and I smiled, he kiss my cheek and I giggled, he move his lip to my forehead and laughed, he laughed as he move away and I take my lip in

“ Do you have an hidden motive?” he asked and I nod

“ If I have one, I would have used it on you yesterday” I replied and he touch my cheek with his hand, I adjust the face cap that's on his head

“ Let's go inside” he said and I stood, he walk inside and I followed him

“ Sullivan turn on the TV” Shadow said as we enter the living room, I went to sit on the couch and Shadow stood next to Sullivan whose in front of the TV

“ Watch the news” Shadow said as they move away from the TV

NEWS UPDATE ON DAVID KIM

OUR AMICABLE GOVERNOR DAVID KIM GOING FOR THE POST OF A PRESIDENT WON THE PRIMARY ELECTION TODAY

FROM THE EXPRESSION ON HIS FACE YOU COULD TELL THAT HE'S WORRIED ABOUT HIS DAUGHTER KIM SWAN WHO'S KIDNAPPED BY A DANGEROUS ASSASSIN SHADOW

WHAT'S HIS AIM?? WHY DID HE KIDNAP THE GOVERNOR'S DAUGHTER?? HE'S NOT REQUESTING FOR ANY RANSOM WHY??

THE GOVERNOR IS URGING THE CITIZENS TO HELP HIM SAVE HIS DAUGHTER FROM THAT BEAST THAT CALL HIMSELF SHADOW

ANYONE THAT KNOW HIS WHEREABOUT SHOULD SIGNIFY?? THE GOVERNOR IS READY TO REWARD THE PERSON HANDSOMELY

KBS NEWS MOMO

I stare at the TV looking dumbfounded, I glance at Shadow and Sullivan, I caught them staring at me

“ You're staring at me” I said innocently

“ He called me a beast, he's playing the role of a victim whereas I'm the victim” Shadow said

“ I need to tame him” Sullivan said

“ Don't hurt him, he's my father” I said

“ You still call that animal your father, the man that killed your mom, the man whose hands are filled with blood and you still call him father” he shouted and I stood

“ A father will always be a father, he did something bad doesn't mean I should abandon him, make him release his mistake so he will apologize, I can't leave him alone Shadow I will always vouch for him cause he showed me love when everyone when was showing me fake love” I shouted back as hot tears roll down

“ Sullivan take the camera up now” he shouted and Sullivan hastily brought out his face

“ Mr governor can you hear your daughter, she's vouching for you not knowing you are an animal” he yelled as take a step forward and I move backward immediately

He grab me by shirt and pull me closer to himself

“ You said I should make your father realize his mistake so he will apologize, thank you for reminding me about that” he said as he grip my neck tightly and I gasp for air

I hit his hand multiple times and he hit my face hard then push me down, I fell on the couch hitting my back hard

“ Can't you hear the rubbish she's spitting out, you have the gut to vouch for him even when,,,,,oh goodness” he shouted and walk away, Sullivan pause the video and breathe out

“ I don't really like you but the way he's hitting you I'm suddenly feeling your pain” Sullivan said and I cough loud gasping for air

He walk away and come back with a glass cup of water, he gave me the water and drink it, gulping everything down

“ Are you okay?” he asked and I nod

“ I thought you don't like me and yet you are helping me” I said lowly and he sigh glancing around

“ Swan it's not that I don't like you, it's just that I'm having this hunch that you are up to something” he said

“ I'm not up to anything” I said and he nod then walk away

Father I made him angry cause I vouch for me, please don't let those allegations to be true, I stood and went back to the dark room

I gently lay on the floor and close my eyes, mother I miss you

Garam pov

We spent two hours in the hospital, the dentist doctor was busy dealing with other patients

“ So just give her this medicine

she's gonna be fine” the doctor said and I nod

“ Is that why she's not smiling?” I asked as I glance at Haeun who rest her head on my shoulder staring at the door

“ Don't worry she's gonna smile” he said and I nod

“ Thank you” I said and walk out of his office, I carry her very well as we went downstairs, I did not take the elevator

I bump into Cassie, she's coming out from the dressing room

“ Garam what are you doing here” she said smiling

“ I came to see the dentist because of her” I said and she glance at Cassie

“ Your daughter?” she asked

“ No not my child, this is my cousin daughter” I said and Cassie touch her cheek

“ Why is she not smiling?” she asked as we walk heading outside

“ She's feeling pains, her teeth are about to grow” I said and she nod

“ She's cute” she said and I chuckled

“ You're just leaving now?” I asked

“ Yeah I was helping Lina out” she replied and I nod

“ You need to rest”

“ You too rest” she said as she enter her car and I enter the car, I gently drop her ok her small stroller and lock the belt, I enter the driver seat and drive out of the building

Cassie drive out first and I followed her behind, she came out from the building and we pass the same direction

When she reach the junction she took a left turn and I took a right turn

I glance at the side mirror and make sure no one is tracing my car

“ Haeun are you okay?” I asked and I heard no voice, I glance at her through the mirror and saw her struggling to open her candy

“ So cute” I said smiling, I increase the speed and soon I reach home

I gently park my car next to a black sport car and get down from the car, I went to carry Haeun that's in the backseat with her drugs

We enter the house and saw no one in the living room

Where's everyone??

I went to the dark room and met Swan on the floor, is she okay???, I close the door and went upstairs to Shadow's room

“ Vinci...” I called as I enter his room, I met him drinking alcohol

“ I'm back” I said and he glance at me

He stretch his hands forth and Haeun stretch her hand forth at him, I gently drop her on the bed and she crawl to his side

Vinci hug her and she did not still smile, she's gentle

“ Her temperature is high and she's not smiling” Vinci said

“ She's gonna be fine once she take her medicine and you know how she behaves when she's sick, she hardly smile when she's sick” I said and he nod

“ Thank you”

“ Before I forget, did anything happened while I was away cause I saw Swan in the dark room whimpering” I said and he gently drop Haeun on the bed

“ Nothing happened” he said

“ Something definitely happened cause I saw her in the dark room”

“ Garam I was just putting her in her place, she even reminded me of her place” he said

“ You guys fought cause of the governor” I said and he glance at me

“ How do you know??”

“ You always get worked whenever she try to support of her father” I replied

“ Why will she support that monster” he said raising his voice a little bit

“ Do you want her to support you” I said and he look away

“ I need some time along” he muttered and lay on the bed next to Haeun

“ Don't let that animal hurt you” I said and he sat upright immediately

“ Something cross my mind through that statement you said, take care of Haeun I will be shortly” he said and get off the bed and rush out of the room

Shadow's pov

I rush out of the room and went straight to Sullivan's room, I met him drinking water

“ We have something to do” I said

“ Tell me?”

“ Let's tease the man and make him cry” I replied

“ Shadow you are wanted everywhere” he said and I nod

“ Today is memory day” I said and he stood then follow me

“ Look for a way we can see him” I said and walk away taking a direction

I went to the dark room and saw Swan sitting on the floor with her face covered with her palm

“ Let's go and see your father” I said and she drop her hands down then stand

“ Are you serious?” she asked and I walk out of the room without replying her

She followed me and we walk out of the room, we went to the living room

“ Vinci the cuff” I said and he throw the cuff at me, I use it to pin her hands together

“ The governor is in his Villa” Sullivan said

“ We're taking two cars cause that animal is smart, the new car and the old car” I said and he nod

He take the keys that's on the table and we walk out of the house, Sullivan pass the old car key to me and I catch it

I enter the car with Swan and drive out of the compound, Sullivan car follow

We were about to reach the Villa when we park the car properly, I get down from the car with Swan, I make sure I take the gun loaded with bullets and enter Sullivan car, the new car I make sure the car doors and windows are locked, we arrive at his Villa and we saw just two security men in front of the building

“ Sullivan the face cap” I said and he bring out two face caps, I wear the face cap and breathe out

We get down from the car and I pull Swan closer to myself, I bring out the gun and point at the men

“ I don't have business with you all, I have business with your boss” I said and they bring out their gun and point it at me

“ Shoot me and I will shoot her, trust me” I said and they bring out their gun

“ Come in”

We enter the Villa with the guards pointing their useless gun at me, we went upstairs in his room and lo and behold we met him a minor

“ What a perfect show Swan” I said as I glance at her, Swan eyes are fixed on the high school girl that's on the governor's bed

“ F....Fa.....Fat..... Father” she stuttered and I smiled in satisfaction

Sullivan lock the door and windows, he drop the curtains down

“ This is the man you are vouching for” Sullivan said and Swan scoff

“ This is a dream right” Swan screamed and the governor try to touch her when I point the gun at him

“ Don't spoil my show” I said and he move away

“ Did he drag you here or you drag yourself?” Sullivan asked

“ I drag myself cause he promise me scholarship, he promise to pay my mother's hospital bill” she said as she get down from the bed and kneel

“ Please spare my life”

“ Sullivan search if you are gonna see any cash around” I said and he search around

He saw a bag loaded with money, he open the bag and bring out ten bundle of cash, he throw it on the floor

“ Shadow is it enough?” he asked

“ High School girl is the money enough to save your mother?” I asked and she just cried

“ Sullivan add ten more to it” I said and he bring out the bundle of cash and throw it on the floor

The girl pack the money inside her bag “ Leave and I must not see you with this monster” I said and she nod

She was about to run away when Swan grab her hair screaming loud

“ How dare you seduce my father” she screamed and I drag her backward with force

“ If you want to scream at anyone, scream at that animal you call your father” I said

“ This is a step up” she said

“ Yes Swan it's a set up” governor said

“ Shut up” I growled and he keep his mouth

“ Okay let's start the history class, do you remember Hwang chaewon, the girl you used raped” I said and he glance at Swan

“ I did not rape her, Swan don't believe him” the governor said

“ Remember you killed Nayeon and forge the death” I said

“ I did not do that, Swan don't believe him” the governor said

“ Now that you have seen your father, ask him your annoying question” I said

“ Your attitude put me into a mees and yet you still have the gut to cheat on my dead mother, sleeping with a high school girl are you not ashamed!!” she shouted!

“ But I'm happy my revenge is not a waste, you still care about her while cheating around, what a wonderful Dad” I said

“ Shadow what's your aim?” The Governor said

“ Confess your sin to the world” I said point the gun at him, Swan glance at me and hastily fall on her knees

“ Please don't shoot, I know you resent him but please don't shoot” she said with hot tears rolling down

“ Where are my guards?” the governor shouted

“ They are having a wonderful time” I replied

The governor took the vase that's on the table and raise it

“ I'm gonna kill you” he growled

“ Father don't do that” Swan screamed as she stood and face him

The governor throw the vase and Swan push me aside taking the hit

The vase hit her head hard and fell on the floor hitting her head hard on the floor with blood gushing out

“ Swan....” Sullivan screamed and I rush to her side

“ Swan please stay strong for me” I said as I hug her tightly and blood keep gushing out nonstop

“ My daughter

“ I hate you, Kim you don't deserve the name Father”

11

(Tripping for danger...)

“ Swan don't die” Shadow said as he carried her up with a bridal style

He rush her out of the room and Sullivan followed him, the security guards suddenly came out from nowhere and appear in front of them

They all widened their eyes when they saw Swan in a pool of blood, Shadow black top is soaked with blood

“ Pave way, instead of blocking us why don't you go and save your boss” Shadow said and they all ran to the Governor's room

Shadow and Sullivan use that opportunity to run away, they enter the car and drive out of the compound crazily

He's gonna wild, his hands are soaked with blood as he clutch onto her tightly, he remove the broken glass from her hair and tear his black tank top, he use that teared piece to stop the blood from gushing out

“ Swan can you hear me” Shadow called with a shaken voice, she breathe out as her body become more weak, she could barely move a finger

“ Vinci the new car” Sullivan said as they pass the car side

“ Forget about that damn car her life is important to me” he growled and Sullivan increase his speed

Shadow touch Swan face with his right hand and use the left hand to hold hand

“ Please stay strong” he said and Swan stare at him weakly, she close her eyes and Shadow hug her tight

Shortly, they arrive and Shadow get down from the car carrying her as he rushed in

He saw Garam feeding Haeun, Sullivan enter the house and close the door hard

Garam glance at them, she widened her eyes when she saw Swan in a pool of blood

“ Please treat her” Shadow said lowly and Garam nod

“ Let's go upstairs”

She went upstairs and Shadow followed her carrying Swan, they enter Shadow's room and he gently drop her on the bed

Garam went out of the room and came back with a big black box, she opened it and bring out the medical tools

“ Sullivan what's your blood type?” Garam asked as she treat Swan

“ O negative” Sullivan replied

” I will need to do a blood transfusion” Garam said as she suture the head injury

She stop the internal bleeding and suture the injury that's on her head

“ Can't I transfer my blood to her?” Shadow asked and Sullivan glance at him

“ Have you forgotten your health status?” Garam said and Shadow bite his lower lip

“ Shadow if you give her your blood, you and I know that you are gonna faint” Garam said

“ Is there anything that I need know” Sullivan said as he glance at the both of them

“ Garam just do it” Shadow said and she sigh

“ If you faint then forget about it we're going to the hospital together” she said

Shy bring out a hypodermic syringe, she pierce it through his arm vein and passed it through a plastic tube into Swan vein

“ This is gonna take an hour or more than that” Garam said and he nod

“ I was saying something earlier, why were you opposing the blood transfusion??” Sullivan asked and no one replied

“ When is she gonna wake up?” Shadow asked

“ Very soon” she replied

“ Hello I'm saying something” Sullivan said

“ Sullivan let's leave the room” Garam said as she pack the box and walk out of the room dragging Sullivan along

Shadow breathe out as he face Swan whose eyes are closed, he touch her face smiling and the smile slowly fade away when his throat start itching him

He itch his throat and cough loud, he's feeling a sore pain in his throat

“ Damn the pains are back, I thought she said it's gone already” he muttered as he continue itching his throat till he fall asleep

***** 2 hours later

Swan pov

I felt someone's hand on my wrist and I open my eyes immediately only to see Garam removing needle from my wrist

“ What's going here?” I asked lowly and she glance at me

“ You almost lost your life today but he saved you even tho he knows it's risky” she replied and I glance at my left hand side to see Shadow sleeping peacefully

Garam remove the needle that's in his arm vein and walk out of the room

“ I think I need an explanation” I muttered as I turn around and face him

My hand move to his soft cheek and caress it smiling

“ He's cute when he's asleep” I muttered and suddenly I felt a sharp pain in my head, I was about to drop my hand from his cheek when I felt someone touching my hand

“ What's wrong” I heard a hoarse voice and saw Shadow staring at me

“ What happen to your voice?” I asked

“ Nothing” he replied

“ Your voice is hoarse” I said and he chuckled

“ See it as nothing, how are you feeling now?” he said

“ I'm feeling headache”

“ Sorry you are gonna be fine” he said and I smiled, I could still feel some pains round my head

“ What happened?”

“ You took the hit for me why??” he said

“ Vinci I don't want you to get hurt”

“ Swan you almost die” he said

“ Thank goodness I'm alive”

“ You lost so much blood” he said

“ Let's be happy I'm alive” I said and he pull me closer to himself

He hug me but I did not reciprocate, I disengage from the hug and move away from him

“ What's wrong?” he asked

“ You're acting nice to me, hope you are not gonna hit me again”

“ Don't worry I'm not gonna hit you, not again” he said and pull me closer, I hug him and he kiss my forehead, he kiss my lip sweetly and I reciprocate

His hands move inside my tank top touching my bare skin, his hand caress my bare back skin

“ Your body temperature”

“ It's warm” I replied and he nod

My eyes move to his neck and I saw a small lump

“ Vinci are you okay?” I asked as I touch the lump with my finger and he held my finger immediately

“ Don't touch it Swan, it hurt” he said and flip my eyelashes twice

“ What's wrong??? Are you sick??” I asked

“ No I'm fine” he replied and release my finger

“ Is there anything I need to know?” I asked

“ Swan you need to rest so you can overcome those shocks” he said and my mind cross back at my father

I can't just believe I met him a high school girl in his Villa, I'm sure I'm older than her and he's not ashamed to stay on top of her

He even try to hurt the man I,,,,,, he try to hurt him I think I'm falling for, the man that made me feel secure anytime I'm with him

Someone that risk his life to save me, he's my father's enemy, he's a monster and I'm not suppose to fall in love, I know that but I just can't help it ever since the day Garam said I should be close to him

Everyday he wear a new character and that's making me to be curious, I wanna know more, I wanna know what made me to be an assassin, I wanna know his pains and I want him to share it with him

“ Swan you are crying” Vinci said jolting me out of my thought

“ Crying?? I'm not crying” I said as I touch my cheek and it's wet, I gently put my hand down staring at him

“ What's going through your head?” he asked softly as he clean my tears with his thumb

“ Can I say something?”

“ Sure I'm ready to listen to you” he replied with his hand still on my cheek, I gulp down nervously

“ Vinci I love you” I said with my eyes closed and his hand froze on my cheek

I slowly open my eyes and caught him staring at me looking dumbfounded, I manage to sit upright and hold his two hands, I intertwine my small hand into his big hand

“ Vinci allow me to shoot my shot”

“ You are not feeling too good so I think you need to rest” he said

“ No I'm serious I love you”

“ Swan you can't love me” he said more like a whisper

“ Why??, Am I ugly??, is it because of my premature Boobs, am I too skinny or is it because of my father??” I asked rushing my words as my eyes are fixed on him

“ Swan you are beautiful and your body is irresistible,,,,,, you just can't understand” he whispered softly

“ Make me understand

Advertisement

don't make me look like a fool expressing my love to a guy first”

“ Swan you can't just understand” he whispered and I take my lip in

“ You still hate me??”

“ Swan is just that...”

“ You still hate me because of my father”

He just stare at me without saying anything and my eyes become misty

“ You need to rest” he said as he stood and stroll out

As soon as he step out I cry my eyes out, I sob loudly as I soak the pillow with my tears

Just can't believe he turn down my love, damn it Swan someone just turn your love down

I could feel a loud bang on my head but that doesn't stop my tears, I continue crying my eyes

First attempt may not work out well but I keep trying I believe it's gonna work out well

Juran pov

“ Ma'am your mother wants to see you” a maid said as soon as I open my room door

“ Where are your manners?”

“ I'm sorry ma'am, good morning ma'am” she greeted and I rolled my eyeballs

“ Just get the f**k” I said and walk away closing my room door, I went to my Momma's room, I open the door without knocking on it and I met her pacing round the room receiving a phone call

“ Momma” I called and she shush me immediately, I frown my face as I sit on her king sized

“ Thank you Liam” she said and cut the call

“ Mom you shush me”

“ I was on an important call and you call me” she replied

“ So the call is more important than me?”

“ No the both of you are important” she replied

“ You called for me”

“ Your father wants you to take over the new company” she said

“ What about Swan fashion company?”

“ Juran do you have any idea of the stress I passed through before he can give you the cosmetic company” she said

“ But Mom I want Swan fashion company”

“ Go and check the cosmetic company, Yiga will be your new personal assistant” she said

“ Eww mom that commoner” I said

“ That's what your father want so you have to follow his rules if you wanna be in control of his bank accounts” she said and I rolled my eyeballs

“ Where's that brat?”

“ She should be outside” she replied and I stood then walk out

My heels keep creating a loud and I love it like that, I got outside and I saw that brat standing in front of my black car

“ Hey don't transfer your wretchedness to my car” I said and she bow

She open the back seat door for me and I enter the car, she enter the driver seat and drive out

“ Do you know the cosmetic?”

“ Yes Swan oh sorry” she said as she glance at her

“ Hey I'm not Swan, where's your manners” I shouted! and she just bow without flinching

My voice is not affecting her really?? Swan have spoil her with love

“ I'm sorry ma'am” she said

“ Just shut up” I half yelled and she nod

The ride to the company was silent like a graveyard, I kept myself busy with Celebrity news and I saw something about

Mika, I saw her in the club last night with Aldo I thought I was drunk but now it's real

Yesterday club night was lit, seriously that Mika girl is a real bitch, she caught me kissing Aldo and few minutes later I caught her screwing him in the toilet

Pu**y is still gonna kill that bastard, he's always screwing a girl everytime

“ Ma'am we're here” Yiga said and I rolled my meyeballs

I get down from the car holding my Chanel bag, Yiga park the car properly then get down, she enter the building and I followed

“ This is the backdoor” she said and I rolled my eyeballs

“ Just shut your stinking mouth and take me to my office” I said as we walk, I could feel all eyes on me as I walk elegantly

“ Hey Juran” the voice I don't wanna hear, that bitch

I tilt my heels as I turn around to see Mika holding two shopping bags

“ Hello Mika” I said and she move closer to me

“ We're meeting again after that heated argument in the club last night” she said

“ Mika welcome to my new company, can you purchase my expensive cosmetic” she scoff

“ Definitely, what do you take me?? A pauper??” she said smiling

What a fake smile

“ So now you are rolling with politicians who's sponsoring you”

“ Your father is my next target” she said and I scoff

“ He's not gonna fall for your trap, I trust him”

“ Juran,,,,anyways how's your new boo, I can't believe you're dating your sister fiancée” she said smiling

“ Why will I date an asshole” I said smirking

“ Huh!! Juran”

“ You better don't fall for a cheater cause he's gonna shatter your heart”

“ What are you doing with him?” she asked

“ I'm just using him to satisfy my urge, no string attached cause I know he's a player, in one word we're both playing each other”

“ Juran”

“ I have something very important to do, see ya later” I said and walk away with Yiga

“ You heard everything??”

“ No ma'am” she replied

“ Go on with the pretense”

We take the elevator heading to the 4th floor, we step out of the elevator and the door close

Yiga enter a room with a glass thick door, I enter the room and trust me I was welcome with an AC, the room is beautiful

“ Ma'am this is your office” she said and I nod pretending as if the room is not enticing

“ Get me a coffee” I said

“ There's no cafe around” she said

“ Look for it and I want ice americano” she bow and walk out

I went to sit on the office chair and take off my heels

Yes!! Momma I love you

Now my position is my back to me and Swan is out of the way

She can never come back

Shadow pov

Later in the evening, I watch as Garam prepare Haeun milk

“ How are you feeling now?” she asked as she glance at me

I sat on the table and she stood next to me preparing the milk

“ Better I guess”

“ Have you eaten?” she asked

“ Not yet” I replied

“ Are you not hungry?” she said

“ Not really”

She drop the teaspoon inside the cup and face me, she pull the turtle neck top I'm wearing, she check my neck and see the small lump there

“ Vinci..” she called

“ It's nothing don't panic”

“ So you think wearing turtle neck top will hide the lump away from me” she said

“ I just don't wanna bother cause we've been battling with it for months”

“ Shadow why am I here??? Is it not to treat you against if you get sick or injured” she said

“ Garam I'm fine”

“ No you are not, that damn thing is back that's why there's lump on your neck” she said

“ I will just resume my drugs and I will be fine”

“ Why have you not eaten?” she asked

“ Garam...”

“ Be sincere with me” she said

“ I'm having difficulty in swallowing food and I have sore throat”

“ Should we go to the hospital to check the stage?” she asked

“ I will be fine, don't tell Sullivan and Swan”

“ Don't worry I won't tell them anything” she said and I sigh

“ Is the cure in Korea?”

“ Not yet but I will get you your drugs” she replied and I nod

“ Thank you” I said and get down from the table and walk out

I saw Swan coming downstairs, there's bandage on her forehead, her face lit up when she saw me

“ Heyy..” she said smiling

“ How are you feeling?” I asked as I went to the pool side

“ Feeling better but I'm still feeling headache” she said and I turn around and touch her forehead

It's warm and she smiled “ Stop smiling”

“ Vinci I love you” she said and I chuckled

“ Not again Swan”

“ Vinci I'm serious I love you” she said and I chuckled

“ Have heard you”

“ Is that all you are gonna say???” she said

“ What are you expecting?”

“ I hate you” she said and was about to walk away when I pull her into a warm hug

“ You can't hate me it's not possible”

“ What if I decide to hate you” she said

“ Then I will make you love me back” she hug me tightly and I kiss her cheek, she giggled

This gonna be a sad love story as things is going on

“ Swan if I let you go now will you go??”

“ Of course” she replied and I nod

What do I expect, she's definitely gonna pick her family over me, she's definitely gonna pick those haters over love

“ Do you wanna release me now” she asked as she face me, her hands are on my arm and my hands are on her waist

“ Swan...”

“ Vinci I'm going now, I will get the drugs for you” Garam said as she peep

“ Thank you” I said and she smiled then walk away

“ Are you sick?” Swan asked and I chuckled

“ No I'm not sick the drug is for you”

“ But I saw lump on your neck” she said

“ You're hallucinating”

“ No Vinci I'm serious, I saw a lump there” she said

“ You're hallucinating”

“ Take off your top” she said and I shut her with a kiss

“ Are you bribing” she said

“ I'm not sick so forget about the lump, you are hallucinating” I said as I turn her around, I back hug her and she giggled

“ Vinci....” she called

“ I know what you are gonna say”

“ What's it?” she asked

“ Vinci I love you”

“ No you are wrong, I want to say you are cute” she said and I chuckled

“ Let's go inside”

“ No let's stay here” she said

“ Are you not hungry?”

“ Oh yeah that's true, let's go inside” she replied and we went inside, she held my arm firmly and I smiled

We entered the living room and saw Sullivan playing game with Haeun trapped inside her stroller, staying next to me

“ Sullivan what do you wanna eat?”

“ Steak...” he replied with his eyes fixed on the game

We went to the kitchen and prepare the steak with other foods
I arrange the steak inside two glass plates, cutting it smoothly

“ Don't you like it??” she asked

“ I can't eat now”

“ Why???” she asked

“ Nothing”

Swan take a piece of the steak that I cut and force it inside my mouth

“ Eat it and you are gonna like it” she said and I just nod, my body start feeling uneasy

“ A minute”

I ran upstairs heading to my room, I enter my room and went straight to the bathroom, I vomit the steak out and cough loud

The steak came out followed by blood, I widened my eyes when I saw the blood

“ Shadow....” I heard her voice and glance at my reflection in front of the mirror

“ Oh goodness I don't wanna die, not now” I muttered

12

“ Shadow....” I heard her voice and glance at my reflection in front of the mirror

“ Oh goodness I don't wanna die, not now” I muttered

“ Vinci....” I heard her voice and I hastily rinse my mouth and step out of the washroom

“ Are you okay?” she asked and I nod

“ I'm fine”

“ Are you sure?? You can talk to me” she said and I smiled

I hug her and she reciprocate “ Are you sure you are okay?” she asked

“ Trust me Swan I'm always fine”

“ Let's go and eat” she said as she disengage from the hug

“ I'm not hungry”

“ You need to eat” Swan said as she drag me downstairs, I saw Sullivan eating as Haeun stare at him

“ Have she eaten?”

“ Garam have given her food” Sullivan replied

“ Are you sure?” I asked

“ Trust her” he replied

“ Then why is she staring at you” Swan said and Sullivan glance at Haeun

He drop the game pad and carry Haeun out of her stroller

“ Maybe she wanna try your food” Swan said

“ I will feed her” Sullivan said and I sluggishly walk away, I went to sit on the dining chair and drink the water that's on the table

“ Are you not eating?” Swan asked and I glance at her, she gently sit on the chair in front of me

“ I'm not hungry”

“ Vinci you need to eat so you can have strength” she said and I smiled

“ Staring at you is enough, your stay and safety is enough for me”

“ Are you admitting your love for me” she said and I shut her up with a steak

“ Eat your food so you can rest, it's late already”

“ Are you not going to eat?” she asked

“ I'm fine” I replied and watch as she dig the food, she eat the food and glance at me at every interval

“ Why the stare??”

“ Are you sure you are fine?” she asked

“ I'm fine”

“ I'm staying by your side today” she said and I nod

“ Anyhow you want it is please by me” I bring out my phone and search for the latest news

OUR AMICABLE JUST RELEASE A STATEMENT ABOUT MEET THE DANGEROUS ASSASSIN SHADOW WITH HIS DAUGHTER SWAN

I read the news and stood immediately “ Sullivan change the channel to news”

He end his game and change it to news, the governor face appear on the screen

“ This man again” Sullivan said and I glance at him

We watch as police parade his Villa room and the next scene they showed was the governor with an injured face

“ Did you hit my father?”

“ How will I hit him when you were bleeding seriously” I replied without glancing back

“ What's this?” Sullivan said and glance at me

“ He's playing the role of a victim” I said with my eyes fixed on the TV

The press interview the governor DAVID KIM and I keenly watch what he's gonna say

“ Sullivan is this live?” I asked and hastily bring out his laptop and phone

He press some buttons then glance at me “ It's live” he said and I smirk

“ SHADOW CAME WITH MY DAUGHTER, HE HURT HER, HE HURT MY GUARDS AND ALSO HURT ME THEN ESCAPE WITH HER” the governor said and I scoff

“ Gibberish”

“ Father I'm disappointed in you” Swan said aloud and I sigh

“ Sullivan call him” I said

“ What do you wanna say?” he asked

“ I wanna ruin his game”

Sullivan called him and in the TV I could see his guard giving a phone, he pass the phone to me and I could see the governor putting the phone on his ear

“ Mr governor”

“ Shadow where's my daughter, please release her” he said and I could see how the press surround him

“ Put the phone on speaker if you want me to release her”

“ What!!!”

“ Don't try me” I said and I watch as he put the phone on speaker

“ David Kim what a nice try”

“ Shadow release my daughter” he said

“ I'm watching you right now so if you try to do any stupid thing trust me you know what I can do”

“ What do you want?”

“ Tell the world your secret and tell assemble man Lee that I'm coming for him” I said and cut the call

I could see how the press throw different questions at him and I smiled in satisfaction

“ Sullivan get ready we're going out tomorrow” I said as I drop the phone on the couch and sluggishly walk back to the dining room

“ Are you really gonna kill me?” Swan asked

“ Why will I kill you”

“ But you just said it” she said

“ Swan please eat your food” I said and she sit on the chair and finish her food

My eyes move back to the TV and I continue watching it with knee interest

Now let me see how he's gonna escape this, he thinks he's smart

“ Vinci I'm okay” Swan said and I nod

“ Are you ready to sleep?”

“ I will just watch the news and play with Haeun” she replied and walk past me to meet Haeun who's trying to eat Sullivan food

“ Sullivan don't give Haeun any steak, her teeth is still growing”

“ How old is she?” Swan asked

“ She's gonna be one early next month” I replied

“ So right now she's eleven months old” Swan said and I nod

My phone rang and I pick it after checking the id, Garam

“ Hey any problem”

“ Idiot I just saw the news what are you thinking” she yelled

“ Keep your voice low, I'm just teasing him” I said as I walk upstairs

“ The news is live” she said

“ Garam I know that”

“ Why did you do that?” she asked

“ He's annoying, can you believe he's trying to play the role of an innocent man”

“ Let's forget about him first, have you eaten?” she said

“ You know I can't eat anything”

“ What are you gonna do now?” she said

“ I should be the one asking you that question”

“ Okay you know what, I will ask my superior” she said and I nod as if she can see me

“ Thank you”

“ In the mean time try taking liquid drink” she said

“ Thank you” she cut the call and I drop the phone on the lamp stand

I lay properly on the bed covering my body with the duvet, I turn off the white light and turn on the red light, I dim the light

“ Let's sleep” I muttered as I close my eyes and sleep

Garam pov

I cut the call and I sigh, he's really passing through a lot

“ Garam were you talking to someone” Cassie said as she enter the changing the room

“ Not really”

I pack my hair as I wear the lab coat, I wear my id card and face her

“ Have you seen the news?” she asked and I nod

“ Definitely”

“ That Shadow is really bold and I keep wondering what's going on between him and the governor” she said

“ You're always watching news”

“ Of course I need to watch it so I can know what's going on, what's the governor sin” she said

“ Don't know...”

“ Is Eric in the office” I added and she nod

“ You wanna see him?” she asked and I nod

“ A minute I will be back” I said and walk out of the changing

I went upstairs through the elevator, I went to his office and when I reach the door I gently knock on it

“ Come in” I heard his voice and I push the door knob down, I enter his office and close the door

“ Eric can I see you for a minute” I said and he smiled

“ What do you wanna say?” he asked

“ Remember my cousin I told you about last year”

“ Oh that cold guy” he said and I frown my face

“ He's not cold, he's a lovely you are gonna love him”

“ I don't wanna love him, what's wrong?” he said

“ The illness is back”

“ The thyroid” he said and I nod

“ He could barely eat, he's having difficulty in swallowing food”

“ Okay Garam you know the cure is not in Korea presently so I will advise him to resume his drug and again we treated him, I'm surprise when you're telling me that the illness is back” he said

“ I was surprised too when I saw the lump on his neck and Eric what about his difficulty in swallowing food?”

“ The drug will take care of it” he replied and I nod

“ Eric thank you”

“ You welcome so Garam are you gonna be free tomorrow?” he said and I take my lip

“ Do you want me to do anything for you?”

“ Not really, I just want us to go for lunch in my favorite restaurant” he replied and I nod

“ It's fine by me, what time?”

“ By 2pm, should I come and pick you up?” he aske

“ Em', There's no need for that, I will meet you in the restaurant so just send the address”

“ Thank you” he said smiling and I nod

“ My shift, I have to go and about the drug, can you bring it along with you tomorrow?”

“ Definitely” he said and I nod

I walk out of his office and I could feel his eyes on me, I startled when I saw Cassie standing in front of me licking lollipop

“ Are you eavesdropping?”

“ I could barely hear anything so gist me” she said and I wrap my arm round her neck as we walk to the elevator side

“ He wants to have lunch with me”

“ Are you sure?? I think he mean a date with you” she said and I rolled my eyeballs

“ Why are your words always opposite” I said

“ No Garam but wait that guy is damn hot, the nurses and patients are crushing on him” he said

“ Well I'm not part of them”

“ You won't be able to resist him once he show his charm” she said and I chuckled

Swan pov

Shadow he's yet to come downstairs after spending close to two hours upstairs

Is he sleeping or what??

“ Are you not feeling sleepy?” Sullivan asked as he turn off the TV and I glance at him

“ I'm going upstairs now, I will go and drop her”

“ Good night” he mouthed and walk away

I carried Haeun and climb the stairs, I went to his room and when I got to his room, I met him sleeping on the bed

He's sleeping already, so fast

I gently drop Haeun on the bed next to him and was about to walk away when I saw moving his head

There's sweat on his forehead as he move his head left and right, I bend down and touch his hand and immediately he open his eyes

“ Are you okay??? Do you have nightmare?” I asked with concern and he did not talk instead held my hand tightly

“ Say something”

“ Please stay with me” he said and I breathe out

“ Are you okay??”

“Will you stay with me?” he asked

“ I thought the love is one sided love”

“ What if I make it the love equal” he said

“ Vinci don't force yourself to love me”

“ Swan....” he called

“ Sleep I'm not going anywhere

Advertisement

I'm with you”

“ Let's sleep together” he said and I glance at Haeun

“ I thought you don't want this”

“ Swan I want it, I'm fine with anything you want” he said and I smiled

I carry Haeun and drop her inside her small bed, she lick her lower lip as she sleep and I cover her bed with the net

Shadow put the bed to his right hand side as he move to his left side, I lay on the bed next to him and he hug me

“ I wanna tell you something tomorrow” he said and I glance at me

“ Can you tell me now?”

“ Don't rush yourself, I will tell you tomorrow” he said and I nod

I close my eyes and sleep as he kiss my forehead

The next morning, I roll on the bed countless times until my hand touch something

I hastily open my eyes and saw my hand on Shadow's face

“ Sleeping beauty” he said and I hastily remove my hand from his face and sit upright

“ That was a mistake” I said and he smiled

“ I'm going out so please take care of Haeun, Garam is around if you need anything” he said and I check him out properly

He's wearing a black trouser with a black hoodie and black face cap

“ Your dress”

“ Is it bad??” he asked and I get down from the bed, I move closer to him and wear the hoodie cap for him

“ You look good now”

He smiled and walk away, when he reach the door he turn around and run to my side

“ I forgot this” he said and plant a wet deep kiss on my lip, I hold his hoodie tightly as I reciprocate

“ Don't stay long”

“ I won't stay long” he said and walk out of the room

He's sweet, I flip my hair backward as I enter the bathroom, I have a quick bath and step out out of the bathroom naked without tying any towel

I open his wardrobe and saw a big shirt with a short, I wear it after a new set of undies

“ His smell is nice, I love his smell” I muttered as I sniff his shirt

I went downstairs and saw no one there, I went to pool side and saw Garam swimming, Haeun is trapped in her stroller staring at her

“ Heyyy” I called and she stop swimming then glance at me

“ You're awake” she said and I smiled

“ Can I join you?” I asked and she nod

I take my shirt and short then join her in the pool, she's wearing a red bikini

“ I hardly see you in the night”

“ Oh I'm always at work” she said and I chuckled

“ Are you a vixen?”

She chuckled “ No I'm a doctor, more like an intern” she said

“ A rookie doctor” I said and she laughed

“ It's that same rookie doctor that suture your head injury” she said and I smiled

“ Thanks for the treatment”

“ You're gonna pay me someday” she said

“ Definitely”

“ The suture, I'm gonna remove it soon, after a week” she said and I nod

“ So when will you be a real doctor?”

“ Very soon” she replied

Shadow pov

“ Where's he??”

“ Bangor restaurant” Sullivan replied as he drive the car

“ With who?”

“ Senator Jung, governor Kim, the CEO of Always law firm and assembly man Lee” he replied and I nod

Shortly, we arrive at the restaurant and get down from the car

The restaurant is more like an ancient restaurant, we enter the restaurant and follow Sullivan lead

“ Where's he??”

“ The last room” he replied and I saw two guards standing in front of the room

We approach the room and the guards point their gun at me

“ Who are you” the first guard said and I take the gun from his hand and hit his face with my elbow, Sullivan hit the other guy face and collect the gun from him

“ His men are weak like the f**k” I muttered and he chuckled, I enter the room swinging the gun in hand and I could see the governor staring at me

“ I came to pay a visit to you all”

“ So bad, I can't believe you guys are having breakfast without inviting us” Sullivan said

“ Who are you?” Assembly man Lee asked and I scoff

“ Shadow, a brother to Hwang chaewon” I said and I could see a different expression on their face

“ Assembly man Lee and governor Kim molest her and if she try to resist you, you're gonna hit her, you guys took turn in sleeping till she got pregnant”

“ You threatened her when she threatened to reveal your dirty secret to the world, you sent your hungry boys to kill her, they took advantage of her before killing her and now you are having fun after killing a human”

“ Do you have any evidence?” the governor said and I chuckled

“ She explained everything to me and she also gave me an undeniable evidence so now I'm gonna give you a choice, reveal your secret to the world and I will release your daughter or I will upload your secret to the world” I said

“ An undeniable evidence” the senator said and I smirk

“ Who's gonna believe all this bullshit that you are saying” the fourth man said

“ Oh that's Choi Jin the reputable lawyer that's cleaning their mess, the man that called your evidence trash” Sullivan said

“ Mr Shadow nice to meet you, I hope we meet again in the court room” Choi Jin said

“ In the court room watching how the judge is gonna sentence you to life imprisonment and also seize your license” I said and he laughed

“ You dream too much, do you have any evidence?” the governor said

“ I hack each of you phone and gather the evidence that I need” I said as I bring out a USB and drop on the table

“ That's the evidence” I said and senator Jung mount on it immediately

“ You're so dumb for releasing the evidence to us” Assembly man Lee said

“ And you're senseless for thinking I will just release the evidence without a prior thinking” I said

“ Huh!!!”

“ That's the copy, we've three more copy and the original file making it four so try any stupid thing” Sullivan said

“ Guards!!!” the governor yelled and I target the gun on his forehead

“ Don't shout your weak guards are resting”

“ What did you just say” senator Jung said

“ You know it won't be fun if I kill you right now so what about we play a little game” I said

“ I'm calling the police right now” Choi Jin said

“ Call them and kiss your life goodbye”

“ Shadow what are you doing??” the governor said

“ I'm fighting for justice, chaewon can't die like that without justice”

“ Your sister is a slüt, she was enjoying it too so don't blame us”
the governor said

“ Moreover we're paying her handsomely” Assembly man Lee
said

“ Can you listen to the rubbish you are saying” I said

“ Your sister was damn sweet” senator Jung said and I scoff

“ I remember asking your law firm to fight for her death, you
push the death aside and said my evidence is weak, I should go
and look for a strong evidence, Choi Jin I'm back with an
undeniable evidence and I will make sure I take everyone of
you down before resting” I said and the governor laughed

“ Release my daughter” the governor said

“ Tell the world your secret first and see if I won't release your daughter”

“ I won't tell the world anything” he said

“ Then get ready to mourn your daughter”

“ Shadow don't lay your dirty finger on my daughter” he said
and I chuckled

“ He can't do anything to her” senator Jung said and I bring out
a paper, I drop the papers on the table

“ You're embezzling Hansu bio, I have every evidence on that” I
said and they all check the papers

“ How did you get this??”

“ Story for another day, I'm giving you two weeks to tell the
world your secret or you mourn your beautiful daughter” I said
and walk out

TBC

13

Swan pov

He's yet to be back, I'm suddenly worried about him

After swimming with Garam, I get off the pool and put on my clothes heading inside with Haeun

“Swan he's gonna be fine so don't be worried okay” I muttered as I went to the dining room and saw my food on the table

I gently drop Haeun on the table and she carry the chopstick and put it in her mouth

“That's not how to handle it, don't injure yourself” I said as I collect the chopstick from her small hand and open the glass cover

The aroma of the food welcome me and Haeun giggled as she dig her face into the glass plate, her face almost touch the food as her nose roam around

I guess she's trying to perceive the aroma “ It's delicious” she glance at me then glance at food

“ Sween” she muttered and I widened my eyes

“ You can talk...” I shouted! and she giggled moving her butt on the table repeatedly clapping her hands

“ It's Swan not Sween” I said and she look away, her eyes move back to the food

A beef radish soup, egg rolled with stir fry potato

I take the spoon and take a little quantity of the soup, I put it in her mouth and she take everything in

She smiled and point at the egg rolled “ You don't have teeth so you can't eat it” I said and she pout her lip

I cut a little egg rolled and put it in her mouth, she suck the egg rolled with her finger

“ You cute...” I eat my food and gave a little beef radish soup, it's only the beef radish soup that she can take, egg rolled I gave her,,, she spill it out after she's done sucking it

She take the glass cup and I hastily snatch it away from her, I held the cup and put the tip in her mouth as she drink the water

“ Don't handle glass cup by yourself okay” I said

I drop the cup on the table and carry Haeun back to the living room, I gently drop her on the floor and give her the couch pillow,,,,I went back to the dining table and pack the glass plates to the kitchen

The kitchen is always neat, I wash the dirty dishes and arrange the plate into the plate rack,,,I went back to the living room and met her crawling around

“ Hey stop crawling” I said as I chase her and she crawl faster giggling

“ Stop crawling” I said and she crawl to the door, I was about to carry her when the door open revealing Shadow's face

“ Haeun...” Shadow called as he carry her up and she hug him resting her head on his broad shoulder

“ I was not trying to escape we were just playing” I said and he just nod then walk past me

“ He never asked you anything” Sullivan said and walk past me

Why are their words short

Garam is probably upstairs sleeping or busy with social media

I gently sit on the floor resting my jaw on my kneecap as I turn on the TV, I change the channel to Korean chanel

The chanel is playing aespa song “ Savage”, I stood and start dancing to the song following the choreography

“ You're such a great dancer” I heard Sullivan voice and stop dancing immediately, I tilt my neck and caught Shadow staring at me, that tempting blue eyes

He smiled brightly “ Thanks for the compliment”

“ Sween....” Haeun said as she giggle clapping her hands

“ Did she just talk” Sullivan said

“ The first word that's coming out from her mouth is your name” Vinci said and I shrug smiling

“ I'm so special” I said as I flip my hair backward and they chuckled

“ Haeun say my name Sullivan” Sullivan said and I chuckled

“ Sween..” Haeun said smiling and Sullivan frown playfully, he walk away heading upstairs with Haeun and I smiled

“ You took long”

“ I'm sorry about that” he said

“ Apology accepted”

He gesture at me to come closer and I move closer to him

“ Swan...” he called more like a whisper

“ Do you need anything?”

“ I don't want anything much from you, the only thing I want is your love and I'm sorry for confusing you yesterday” he said and I smiled

He held my hand and pull me closer, he made me sit on his lap and I wrap my arm round his neck and he kiss my cheek

“ You're multi talented” he said and I giggled

“ Really???.”

“ You can dance, you making cool cash from your fashion company but you are poor in cooking” he said and I frown my face

“ Really I'm poor in cooking”

“ You don't know how to cook, you remember said it that time”
he said and I look away

“ Where did you go?”

“ To see some greedy men” he replied and I glance at him

Is he talking about my father???

“ My father?”

“ He's not the only one, senator Jung is part including Assembly
man Lee and Choi Jin the CEO of Always law firm” he said and I
sigh

“ So are you gonna kill him??”

“ I'm still deciding on that” he replied

“ What about you tell me what really happened between
chaewon and my father”

“ I will tell you soon” he whispered and hug me resting his head
on my Boobs

BANGOR RESTAURANT

“ How did he get to know about the Hansu bio” Assembly man Lee said

“ Don't you hear what he said, he hack our phones” senator Jung said

“ It's all fault, if only you delete those evidences that's on your phone” Governor Kim said

“ Are you blaming us??. it's all your fault” Choi Jin said and the governor laughed

“ We all agreed to it so don't blame me, we're all at fault” Governor said

“ Instead of blaming ourselves why don't we look for a solution” senator Jung said

“ That bastard is gonna carry out his threat” Assembly man Lee said

“ We need to track him down, that bastard is hitting my daughter every time” the governor said and Assembly man Lee bring out his phone and make a phone call

“ Come in right now” Assembly man Lee said and cut the call

“ Who are you calling??”

“ Personal boy that's gonna clean this mess” he replied

The door open and a young man dressed in suit enter the room

“ Sir you called for me” The Man said as he bow

“ Scott do a research on Shadow and I'm giving you 24 to do that” Assembly man Lee said and Scott bow

“ Consider the job done” Scott said and walk out of the room

“ Can we trust him on that job?” the governor asked

“ He's better than your sluggish private investigator” Assembly man Lee said

“ Can we stop this argument and think of a way he doesn't upload this paper to the world, remember it's gonna affect my law firm” Choi Jin said

“ Jin calm down and watch how Lee is gonna handle this case” senator Jung said

“ Can we now eat”

They mount on the food and resume their old discussion

Scott walk out of the room and bring out his phone

“ Donald we have a new job” he said

“ On my way” Scott said and cut the call

He walk out of the restaurant and mount on his bike, he ride it out of the compound and drive it to Donald store

Soon he arrive at his store, he park his bike properly then get down

He enter his store and met Donald eating black noodles

“ You're here so fast” Donald said

“ Mr Lee wants me to track Shadow” he said

“ This won't be an easy task” Donald said

“ Make it easy, he wants me to track him down within 24 hours”

“ Let's get down to business” Donald said as he shift his noodles aside and open his laptop

“ How are you gonna do it?”

“ We are call him and track him at the same time” he replied

Donald eyes roam the laptop and his keep moving on the keyboard non-stop

“ Have seen the number” Donald said

“ How???”

“ I watch the news last night of how Shadow called so hack the governor's phones and search through his call log there I saw a different number more like foreign number and trace the time, it match with the exact time you called” Donald said

“ You're so smart”

“ Now I want you to call the number and I will try my possible best to track it” Donald said and Scott hastily call the number and luckily someone pick the call, he hastily the phone call on speaker

“ Shadow I have a job for you”

“ What's the job all about” they heard a deep voice then glance at each other

“ I want you to eliminate my sister”

Donald start working on his laptop immediately as Scott continue his phone call

“ Okay I will forward the money” Scott said and the call end

“ How's it???”

“ I think I'm able to track it but I'm seeing three different locations, how come???” Donald said as he tilt his neck

“ Send the address to me right now and I will continue my findings” Scott said and walk out

Donald escort him outside and after making sure he's gone, he brought out his phone and dial a line

“ Sullivan one of Assembly man Lee men is coming for you tonight so watch out, I gave him three address but one is the correct address so watch” Donald said and cut the call

“ I can't betray my supporter” he muttered and went back inside

Garam pov

After hours in the room sleeping, I get myself ready for the date,

Advertisement

„ oh sorry lunch

I wear a body hug blue gown that bring out my curve and shape

“ You're beautiful” I muttered, I carry my bag and phone then step out, I went downstairs and I met sleeping on Swan

Swan sat on the couch and Shadow lay on the couch resting his head on her lap

Love is real and blind, he's not mine but I will never do anything to hurt him, that's what they call love

If you love a guy and he doesn't love you back, he love someone else and you running fast to hurt the person he love,,,swearz you are only gonna hurt yourself, If you truly love him then love who he love too but if you are running fast on how you're gonna hurt the person he love,,,,hey I will call that OBSESSION

“ Are you going to work??” her voice jolt me out of my thought and I nod repeatedly

“ No I have to meet someone more like a lunch date”

She start grinning and I laughed, “ Who's that lucky guy??” she said

“ It's no one”

“ Don't tell me that” she said as she frown her face playfully

“ Okay my superior, my boss”

“ From boss it's gonna turn to my fianceé” she said as she rolled her eyeballs smiling

Swan is this kind of girl that relate with people easily, she's fun to be with

“ Come on now”

“ What's his name??” she asked

“ Eric...”

“ Mmm Eric and Garam what a perfect combo” she said and I chuckled

“ See ya tomorrow”

I walk out of the house smiling, I enter the car and drive out

“ You need to be early for your lunch” I humm as I tap my finger on the wheel, I increase the speed and few minutes later I arrive at the restaurant

I get down from the car and enter the restaurant, now how will I find, I bring out my phone from my bag and dial his line

“ Heyy I'm outside”

“ Just come in, the VIP room” he said and I cut the call

I went upstairs and search for the VIP room, luckily I saw it in the third floor and there I saw different doors

Another problem, how will I know the correct door, I dial his line

“ Sorry for hanging up like that, what's the number??”

“ 10..” he replied smiling and I cut the call

I search for the number and later I saw it at my left hand side, I gently knock on the door and enter the room

There I saw him looking smart sitting in front of a beautiful table filled with food and candle

“ Sorry I took long” I smiled and he gesture at me to sit down.

I went to sit on the chair and he smiled at me, he wearing a black tuxedo

Okay he's looking a little bit expensive this afternoon

“ You look beautiful” he said and I blushed

“ Thanks for your compliment”

“ You're always looking wonderful” he said and I smiled hard

“ My cheek hurt” I said and he smiled

“ Oh before I forget the medicine” he said as he open his bag and bring out a white nylon

I open the nylon and saw the drugs there, he did not even ask about the drug maybe we did not see today

“ How's his health??”

“ The lump and his difficulty in swallowing”

“ He's gonna be fine, the drug is gonna sustain him but Garam have cases of people who died from thyroid cancer so I hope his own won't be at the last stage before we find the permanent cure” he said and I sigh

“ He's gonna be fine right??” he held my hand and squeeze it lightly

“ The drug will help him out” he said and I smiled

“ So what about we order for the food” I said and he smiled

He press a button that's on the table and a minute later a lady enter the room

“ Should I bring it???”

“ Bring it in” he replied and the lady walk away

“ You already planned everything”

“ What do you expect??, I'm gonna have lunch with a rare gem so I gat to prepare myself” he said and I smiled

The lady came back with a big tray of food, she arrange the food properly and was about to pour the wine into the glass cup when she mistakenly spill it on my dressing

“ Oh my goodness I'm deeply sorry” she said as she drop the wine

“ Hey are you okay??” Eric said as he rush to my side, he bring out his handkerchief and use it to clean the stain

“ I'm sorry ma'am”

“ No it's fine you can leave” I said and she walk away

“ Eric I will be fine, the stain just look more like a water stain, it's not visible so I will just go to the washroom”

“ Should I order a new dress for you” he said

“ Hey I'm fine” I stood and walk out

Damn it she ruin my lucky charm dress, I pass through the hallway and saw a washroom at the end, I was about to enter the washroom when I bump into a girl

“ Hey watch it bitçh” the lady said and I glance at her

Wait is this not Beaver, Swan best friend what a betrayer

“ Oh I'm gonna watch it”

“ Heyyy, crazy bitçh” she yelled! and I push her in closing the door behind, I lock the door and she scoff

“ What are you planning to do??” she said

“ To beat you up if you do any stupid thing”

“ Wait you wanna beat me, do you know who I am??” she yelled

“ A lunatic with a disgraceful family” I replied and she was about to hit me when I pull her hair hard, I drag her into one of the toilets and lock the door

Next time she will learn to control her stinking mouth, that's for betraying sweet Swan but your punishment for speaking rudely to me will be on another day

I walk out of the toilet, I unlock the door and walk out of the washroom, a lady enter the washroom after me

Yeah I can act gentle like a dove but I won't tolerate her attitude, she insulted me and I'm gonna punish her for that but that will be later, I just teach her a little lesson for betraying Swan

The lady enter one of the toilets that Garam came from and she fell on the floor when she saw Beaver on the floor with her eyes closed, her clothes are torn and there's a dirty mop on my head, her heels are on her body

TBC

14

SHADOW'S MANSION,,,,,,,,,7PM

Swan pov

He slept like a baby on my lap and I smiled as I touch his soft hair

“ You're cute” I muttered smiling, my hand move to his neck and it mistakenly the lump that's there

Is he alright???, I glance at him before checking the lump properly, the size of the lump have increase, I touch the lump and he tilt his neck

“ Swan don't touch it cause it hurt” Vinci said lowly as he adjust himself properly, I hug him tightly as he rest his head on my flat tummy

“ I'm sorry”

“ Don't be sorry okay” he whispered and I kiss his lip lightly

“ Why is there a lump there?”

“ I seriously don't know but don't worry it's gonna be fine” he whispered

“ Vinci you can talk to me” I said

“ When the time comes I will open up to you” he said as he stood, he stood in front of me and bring his face very close

His hand tuck my strand hair behind my ear, he slowly kiss my cheek then move lip to my lip

He devour it slowly and I reciprocate, he devour it hungrily as if he's searching for a diamond

“ Vinci...”

“ Mmmm do you want anything?” he said amidst the kiss

“ I don't want Sullivan to see us like this, let's go upstairs” I said and he broke the kiss

“ Anything you want” he said and carry me up resting his hands on my thigh, he carried me upstairs to his room

He enter the room and lock the door, he gently drop me on the bed and resume his kiss

He shower kisses on my body as he take off the shirt and short and I'm half naked in front of him

“ We're gonna do this again”

“ I will be gentle I promise, I will take it slowly and allow you to enjoy the ecstasy” he whispered and I nod

He gently lay on the bed and I crawl to his side biting my slower lip, I take off his black top and throw it to only where God knows

I stay on top of him as I kiss his lip and give him a slow ride just like what I saw on the TV

He take off the bra and fling aside, I raise the duvet up and use it to cover our waist, I glance through the thick mirror that's in front of me and I could see the pool

Vinci press a button and the curtain slowly close blocking my view

“ The curtain”

“ I want us to be alone in our beautiful world” he whispered and I smiled

He rip off the pant and I shiver as soon as his hand touch my naked butt

“ Soft I love it” he said and I laughed

“ You're naughty”

“ Just for you” he said and kiss my lip smiling

He take off his short and we went back to that same position, his hands roam my butt as he squeeze it, slapping it lightly every interval

“ Vinci...”

“ Rise a little bit” he said and I slowly rise a little bit, I could feel something big entering my Va**na and swears I don't know when I scream

“ It hurt..” I screamed and he shut me up with a deep kiss

“ Baby I'm sorry” he whispered and I widened my eyes at his statement

“ What did you just call me??”

“ Baby, Swan you're mine alone and I'm sorry for not telling you the I love you word” he whispered

“ You have said it, You just said it now” I said and he smiled brightly

He kiss my shoulder as I ride him slowly moaning softly

“ Mmm you're tight” he said and I smiled

I rest my head on his chest and he take off, he slap my butt hard on his phallus and I moaned, he become fast and my moans become loud

“ Damn you're sweet” he muttered

“ V....Vi.....Vin....Vinci” I moaned loud

“ It hurt,,, you're big”

“ My womb” I moaned and he groan loudly as I felt something warm entering my body

He kiss my lip smiling and I reciprocate “ My seed in your body so manage it well” he said and I laughed

I hug him tightly as I feel his warmth, he kiss my Boobs and I moaned

“ Why are you so perfect and sweet” he said and I smiled

His phallus is still trapped in and I could feel that sweetness building up

“ You can say that again” I said as I lay straight on his body and his hand rest on my butt

“ Swan you are beautiful so what about I let you go, you can leave if you wanna go, you can leave if I mean nothing to you” he said and I face him, I peck his lip

“ You're important to me, the way I feel whenever I'm around you, I have never felt like that whenever I'm with Aldo so why will I leave you, my father is an animal so I can never leave you”

“ Swan he's your father”

“ Vinci I don't f**king care, I'm choosing you over him and you said I should leave, I should go back to meet those animals that hate me, those shyster people that wants me down” I half yelled as my eyes become misty

“ I did not mean to offend you” he said as he kiss my tears

“ Vinci I should go and meet them so they can kill me again, so they can send someone to kill me again”

“ Kim Swan” he called

“ I'm not leaving, I'm staying with you and if it's possible let's get married”

“ So you're choosing me over your father??” he said

“ You're worthy unlike him”

“ What about I show you a strong evidence about him” he said and I breathe out heavily flipping my hair backward

“ That will be tomorrow” I said and get off his body

I lay properly on the bed and he hug me tightly as he kiss my forehead

“ Oh right Haeun??”

“ She's with Sullivan” I replied

“ Let me go and check on her” he said

“ No I will go and check on her” I said as I get down from the bed

I wear his big shirt that reach my knees and step out of the room, I check the rooms and finally I saw him in one of the rooms

He's receiving a phone call and Haeun is sleeping on his bed

“ I came to check on you” I said as soon as h end his call

“ Where's Vinci??” he asked

“ In the room, any problem???”

“ Nevermind, I'm not telling you anything” he replied

“ Sullivan you can always talk to me, I mean no harm”

“ Someone is coming to attack this house” he said and I widened my eyes

“ Who???”

“ Don't know so watch out, don't sleep deeply” he said and I nod

“ Tell Vinci too, prepare yourself” he added

“ Please protect Haeun” I said

“ Trust me on that” he said and I smiled

I step out of the room and I sigh, who's planning to attack??, I enter the room and saw Vinci wearing his short

“ How's she???”

“ She's sleeping peacefully on his bed” I replied as I sigh heavily

“ Babe are you okay??” he asked as he pull me closer

“ Sullivan told me that someone is planning to attack this house tonight so let's get prepared for the worse”

“ Nothing is gonna happen as long as I'm alive” he said and peck my lip

“ I need to dress” I said and enter the washroom

Garam pov

The lunch with Eric was super okay and I'm very satisfied that I dealt with that crazy bitçh that call her Beaver

I wear my uniform then pack my up in a ponytail, where's Cassie???, Why is everywhere silent??

“ Yo Garam” I heard Cassie voice and smiled, I cover my face with my palm as I smiled brightly

She enter the dressing room smiling then hug me tightly

“ I miss you”

“ Ew I thought you want me dead” she said and I hit her head with the back of my finger

“ Why will I want you dead when I was just thinking about you”

“ Liar by the way how was the lunch?” she asked as we disengage from the hug

She went to sit on the couch and rest her legs on the table

“ It was super fun and I saw Beaver”

“ Oh Beaver Swan best friend, that crazy bitçh that think no one is better than her” Cassie said and I raise my eyebrow

“ Do you hate her?? Have you met her before??”

“ Well I met her once in a club, Garam trust me this girl is a bitçh, a bitçh celebrity” she replied

“ Not bad, exactly what I think of her”

“ So what happened after?” she asked

“ She was trying to intimidate me so I beat her up”

“ Oh goodness I wish I was there to watch the drama” she said

“ I took a photo of how she look after hitting her ugly face” I said as I bring out my phone and send the picture to her

“ You're a badass bitçh, damn it” she said laughing as she check the picture on her phone

“ That serve her right”

“ I'm gonna upload it on the social media so she that will teach her how to caution her mouth and behavior” she said and I chuckled

“ Don't tag me on that post”

“ I'm gonna open an anonymous account and tag Shadow's name, begging him to teach that bitçh a big lesson” she said

“ Trust me you're gonna cast”

“ Don't care, I wanna be a celebrity” she said softly and I chuckled

“ Eric is.....” I trailed and she jump on me

“ Don't stop talking, what happened?? Do you guys kiss??” she said rushing her words, her hands are on my head while her body is wrapped round my neck

“ Get off...”

“ Nope start talking” she said

“ The lunch with him was cool you know I have known him since last year so today is gonna be first time we're gonna talk and laugh deeply”

“ Wait you guys never talked about personal life?” she asked and I nod positively

“ We're always talking about patients and health”

“ Oh I remember we joined this hospital last year too” she said

“ You still have an accurate memory”

“ Are you trying to mock me indirectly” Cassie said as she get down from my body and bring out her phone

“ Do you wanna post it now??”

“ Definitely, I wanna be a celebrity” she replied as she press her phone

The door open revealing Mira face as she rushed in shaking like a drench leaf

“ What's the problem??”

“ Emergency right now” she replied and rush out

“ Done posting it on twitter

Advertisement

baby let's go” Cassie said as she jump out

“ What a maniac”

“ I can hear you” I heard her voice and smiled

Beaver pov

F**k that bitçh, how dare her treat me like that, Aldo is not even helping the situation

He keep laughing at me and now I'm going back to his Mansion

I gently drive into his compound and park the car properly, I get down from the car and something caught my attention.

Wait is that not Juran car or am I dreaming???

Hope it's not what I'm thinking, it should never be what I'm thinking

I rushed inside and saw no one in the living room, I went straight to his room and before I reach his room door I could hear a female moaning loud

“ That bastard” I grit my teeth angrily as I burst into his room

Lo and behold I met him screwing Juran a\$ in my favorite s£x position, that bitçh

“ Aldo....” I called and he ignored my presence

“ I'm talking to someone” I shouted!

“ Beaver why are you shouting, just leave quietly and I will explain myself” he said and I angrily take off my heels and throw it at him

He fell on the bed and Juran sit upright then smirk at me

“ Why are you a fun killer” she said and I scoff

“ Did you just say something, what are you doing with my man”

“ Your man or you snatch him away from my sister” she said

“ He's still my man cause your sister is gone, I don't know what that dumb assassin is doing, he should have kill her since”

“ Stop barking like a stray dog and accept the fact that you are a loser, we're sharing the same man” she said and I scoff

“ Aldo say something” I shouted!

“ You have heard the truth so get out” he said and I flip my hair backward

“ Swearz you're gonna pay for this” I said as I carry my heels and walk out of his room, my phone start ringing and I hastily pick the call

“ Hey Beaver check the news, you're trending like hell” Mia said and I bite my lower lip

“ What the f**k are you saying”

“ You're losing a lot of endorsement deal, your movie project and tour is cancelled” she said

“ Why will that old man do that” I shouted!

“ Check online” she said and cut the call

I hastily go through the internet and I saw a picture of me in a big mess

That bastard took a picture of me after hitting me, after ruining my expensive dress and heels

Another video of me bullying a commoner surface on the internet

Beaver you're doomed, Aldo just dump you and now your career is over

I check the comment section and I don't know when I screamed in pain

***** COMMENT SECTION *****

“ That Beaver is a bully”

“ The word fame is really affecting her”

“ MT ENTERTAINMENT should allow her to take a hiatus break”

“ Beaver im disappointed in you”

“ She suck at acting”

“ You're not longer my favorite ”

“ Let's go and storm her Mansion”

“ Guys can you believe I caught her kissing Aldo in the club”

“ Wait is she having an affair with Swan fiancée, I don't think so”

“ This information is from a reliable source”

I read the comment section and burst into a loud tears, Beaver you're dead, I rush out of his house and enter my car then drive out

What are you gonna do now??, It took me years to build this fame so I won't let it get away, it won't be an history

I called Mia and she pick the call immediately, I clear my throat as I talk

“ Have seen it, tell the CEO that I can explain myself and tell that old man to clear this mess”

“ Beaver he can hear you” Mia said lowly and I breathe out

“ Did you just call your CEO old man, you know what MT ENTERTAINMENT won't protect you” he shouted!

“ Old man don't do this”

“ I'm gonna deny you and cancel the contract cause I can't longer bare your peevish attitude” he said and I cut the call

Beaver you're done like seriously just kiss your career goodbye

Who uploaded the video on the internet?? How many shocking news do I wanna receive in a day?

Now I can't go home, I can't go to an hotel without people knowing that I'm the one

I don't say this but I have to “ I wish Swan is here, I will would have use her to clean this mess”

The car slowly drive into her compound, I park my car roughly then get down

“ Hope her pin is still the same” I muttered as I walk to her door step, I press the pin and the door unlock

I enter her house and the frame on the couch welcome me, I saw Mia's frame and chuckled

“ She should be back on time” I muttered, I went to her fridge and bring out a bottle water

I sip the water as I dial her line, she pick the call after hesitation

“ Beaver...” she said

“ I'm in your house”

“ So you can run to my house after that heated argument we had yesterday, you called my house trash and now you are in the trash house” she said

“ Mia okay fine I'm sorry about what I said” I said as I close my eyes

“ Fake apology, the Beaver I know can never apologize easily” she said

“ Mia you're my manager”

“ I quit so leave my house, I must not meet you” she said

“ So you wanna desert me like really”

“ You attitude caused it” she said and I sigh heavily

“ Mia I'm sorry, it's really coming deeply from my heart”

“ I'm yet to accept your apology but you can stay till I come back” she said and cut the call

Big humiliation, I'm gonna spend the night here

Swan pov

“ Stop panicking everything is gonna be fine” he said and I face him

“ Vinci you are not getting it, I'm scared” I said and he hug me tightly, he kiss my forehead then kiss my lip

“ Everything is gonna be alright” he said and I nod

“ Vinci can you excuse me I need to go downstairs and take something”

I get down from the car and walk out of the room, I went downstairs to the kitchen, I enter the kitchen and take the glass cup

Just then I felt someone's presence, my heart start beat fast as I slowly turn around to see a man staring at me, I could barely see his face cause everywhere is dark

The cup fell off and I screamed, he held my hair and drag it hard, he hit my head on the table hard and I felt my vision getting blur

“ Shadow..” I screamed loud as the man drag my hair hard, he kick my tummy and I fell on the floor

He drag my leg and mount on me “ So you're his pretty wife, where's Swan???”

“ What the hell are you saying” I shouted and he hit my face

“ You're gonna be sweet so I will have a taste of you first before looking for Swan” he said

“ Are you blind??”

He was about to hit my face when he fell on the floor, I heard something rolling on the floor, the light turned on and I screamed

“ Hey Swan it's me be calm” I heard his voice and start crying, he hug me tightly and kiss my forehead

“ I'm sorry I'm late” he said and I hit his broad chest

“ He almost have sex with me” I said and he caress my cheek

“ He did this to you??” he said and I look away

I hold him as I stood and we step out of the kitchen there we saw three guys pointing gun at us

“ Wow so this how our amicable Shadow look like”

“ You're cute but say goodbye to that handsome face”

“ Your wife is pretty too”

“ Who sent you??” Shadow asked calmly, I could see his face boiling in anger

“ Are you questioning us”

“ Let's kill him fast so we can have a taste of his wife”

“ You wanna touch my food, something I'm yet to eat and get satisfied, I can never be satisfied once it comes to her” Shadow said

“ Don't be stingy share your food with us, she look delicious and I can't wait to lick her core”

“ I'm sure if I taste I will never get satisfied cause she will be too sweet”

“ Once you get satisfied with a food just know it's over already”

“ I can't get enough of her” Shadow said

“ You're licking her core and she still look intact as if she's a virgin, her shape and everything is still intact, I must have her too”

Just then I saw Sullivan tip toeing, he gesture at me to distract them and I nod

“ So you wanna take turns on me, I'm I that attractive” I said and Shadow glance at me, Sullivan hit their head hard with a plastic stick and they fell

Shadow hastily went upstairs and came back with chain, Sullivan drag the last guy to the living room and Shadow chained the four of them down

“ Now tell me who's smarter??” Shadow said

“ I just have a simple question who's Scott?” Sullivan said and no one open their mouth

Shadow take their gun that's on the floor and point it at them

“ You know I enjoy killing people” he said

“ You're bluffing” one of the men said and Sullivan gave Shadow a pocket knife, he about to design the guy face when I held him

“ Don't do that”

“ Swan that bastard hit your face” he said and I nod

“ It's gonna be fine” I touch my hair and thank God it's not bleeding, the suture is there but I'm feeling a strong headache

“ So no one is gonna talk” Sullivan said

“ The guy that attacked your wife is Scott”

“ Wait first did you just say Swan”

“ Who sent you??” Shadow asked

“ No one” Scott replied

“ Assembly man Lee sent them” Sullivan said and I widened my eyes

“ That's my dad's friend”

“ I think it's time we start an history class, Swan let's see if you are gonna leave or not, remember I gave you the chance to leave, I'm gonna give you that chance again” Shadow said

“ I'm not going anywhere I told you, I prefer to stay here than to go home where I'm gonna die

“ Let's start the history class, let's know what really happened one year ago”

TBC

15

ONE YEAR AGO *****

SKY ORPHANAGE HOME ...

Hwang Chaewon a 20 years old girl or should I say a lady with a wild dream.

Her spotless skin, baby face, long hair, curvy shape and sweet personality.

The Sky orphanage home is having a thanksgiving so everyone is present there except one person.

Chaewon pack the dirty plates and take them to the table where she's gonna wash the dishes

She wear a pink glove and start washing the dishes humming a song silently

“ Chaewon let me help you out”

She glance back to see her, she glance at her baby bump and smiled

“ Alice I can handle this, just go and rest, don't stress my little sister” Chaewon said and Alice laughed

“ Hey come on let me help you out”

“ Don't help me out instead go and look for Vinci then drag him here” she said and Alice made the mmm sound

“ Your brother is at home cruising” Alice said

“ He's at home having fun and I'm here washing dirty dishes”

“ You know he's lazy, the only thing he knows how to do is to cook” Alice said

“ So how are you feeling today??”

“ Energetic...” Alice replied and chaewon smiled

“ Alice can you help me with dirty dishes, I need to go and release my bladder” Chaewon said as she take off the pink glove

“ Go I will take over from here” Alice said and Chaewon walk away

Chaewon enter the building swinging her small curvy shape and no one there could take their eyes off her body caus,,,,, it's so enticing

She enter the washroom and enter one of the toilets, she ease herself and when she's done, she flush the toilet then step out

Chaewon adjust her body hug gown as she slowly raise her head, she startled when she saw a man in the washroom smiling at her

“ Excuse me sir this is the female washroom” she said and the man chuckled

“ Pardon my mistake, what's your name”

“ Chaewon, Hwang Chaewon” she replied

“ A beautiful name for a beautiful girl”

“ Please who are you??” she asked

“ Pardon my manners I'm Choi Jin, you look attractive so I think we should later after this event for some private meeting” he said and Chaewon flip her baby eyelashes pouting her lip sweetly

“ Meeting? I don't know you”

Choi Jin bring out his card and give it to Chaewon who collect it after some hesitation

“ You're a lawyer, the CEO of Always law firm” she said and he nod smiling like a fool as he keep glancing at her hip and small waist

“ My law firm is gonna protect you, I'm gonna introduce you to people that will give you scholarship cause I know you want it

and I'm also gonna give you the opportunity to work in my law firm” he said

“ How do you know I'm chasing after scholarship?”

“ Trust me I have done a deep research on you so when it's time to meet you again I will call you” Choi Jin said smiling as he glance at her hip one more time before walking out of the washroom

“ This is crazy, he look like a maniac” Chaewon muttered as she put the card in her jeans pocket and wash her hands

When she's done washing her hands, she took a tissue paper and use it to clean her hands then dispose it in the waste bin

She walk out of the restroom and saw Choi Jin walking with three men, she could only see their back view but can't see their front view

“ Hope this is not gonna be a scam” she muttered and take another direction heading outside

When she got outside she could not find Alice, she glance around and her eyes caught something

She saw Alice dragging a figure “ Wait is that not Vinci” she muttered

“ Brother!!” she yelled and the figure was about to run away when Alice held it tight

“ Are you really gonna ditch this event”

Chaewon said as soon as she reach his side

“ Alice you said you are in labor that's why I rushed down here” he said

“ I tricked you so you get your a\$\$s off that couch” Alice replied

“ Vinci why are you doing this” Chaewon said

“ You know I hate party” Vinci replied immediately and Chaewon hug him smiling

“ I miss you and I have something to tell you” Chaewon said

“ We're gonna discuss it when we get home” Vinci said and Chaewon nod as she disengage from the hug

“ Don't you miss me” Chaewon said

“ No I miss my Alice” Vinci said as he push Chaewon aside slightly and hug Alice tightly

He kiss her cheek then kiss her lip deeply and she gladly reciprocate

“ Ew' we're in the crowd” Chaewon said

“ And you can walk away” Vinci replied as he hug her back, Alice pull Chaewon closer and they all hug each other

“ What a perfect family” Chaewon said

“ It can be perfect only when you learn to have respect” Vinci said and Chaewon disengage from the hug

“ Like really?, You know I won't give you that respect” Chaewon said

“ I won't force you, I will just cut off your allowance” Vinci said

“ Brother!!”

“ Cut off her allowance and I'm gonna starve you” Alice said and Vinci pout his lip out like a baby

“ Don't do that” he said

“ Don't cut her allowance” Alice said and he glance at Chaewon who's smiling brightly

“ Okay fine I won't do that” he said and Chaewon squealed

“ Thank you brother” Chaewon said as she kiss his cheek and walk away

“ Your sister is pretty cool” Alice said smiling

“ Are you really gonna starve me??, You know I can't get enough of you” Vinci said and she laughed

“ I'm not starve you okay just don't cut her allowance” she said

“ You love her??”

“ Why won't I love your sister when she's a bubble” she said

“ You say what??”

“ I mean she's accommodating , she's free with people” Alice said and Vinci nod

“ Alice I get the fact you are a professor just don't bring your work to me” Vinci said as he walk away and Alice follow him smiling

“ Are you bad at English??” Alice asked and Vinci chuckled

“ I'm not bad just don't bring your high school job to me” he said and she smiled

“ So Vinci you are not gonna ask about your baby”

“ I know my baby is alright” Vinci said and Alice chuckled

“ But she need some milk” Alice said pouting her lip and Vinci glance at her

He chuckled cause he understand what she meant by that statement

“ Really?? A milk??” he said acting innocent

“ Vinci you know what I'm talking about??, You have been so busy with your damn work” Alice said

“ Baby don't worry I will give it to you tonight, anyhow you want it” Vinci said and kiss her cheek, she smiled in happiness

“ Granny wants to see you” Alice said

“ Mmm where's she??”

“ Over there playing with the kids with Chaewon” Alice replied and Vinci follow her eyes direction

He saw Granny dancing with the kids and Chaewon singing for them

“ Let's go together” he said as he intertwine his hand into her hand and walk over to her side

“ Granny...” Vinci called and Granny stop dancing, she turn around to see Vinci and Alice

“ Son you are here” Granny said smiling as she hug him warmly and he reciprocate smiling

“ That's the woman that took care of us” Chaewon said and Alice glance at her

“ No wonder he cherish her so much”

Chaewon pov

I watch as Vinci talked with Granny while Alice play with the kids

After packing the chairs to the store, I pack the dirt that's on the floor and went to dispose it, after throwing the dirt in the waste bin I went to wash my hand thoroughly

My phone start ringing and I hastily turn off the tap and clean my hand

I pick the call as my heart starting beating fast, I applied for scholarship in Seoul national university and I hope I pass it

“ Ma'am sorry to tell this, your request for scholarship is not gonna be approved cause your score is pretty low” the lady said and I sigh

“ It's just a one mark difference, the score is 300 and I got 299 can't you consider it”

“ Sorry ma'am there's nothing I can do about it” the lady said and cut the call

“ Gosh why's it so hard to get a scholarship” I muttered as I cover my eyes with my left palm, I weep silently but stop immediately when I heard footstep approaching my side

“ Chaewon are you crying??” Alice asked and I drop my hand down

“ No I'm not”

“ Come on talk to me, what's wrong??” she said softly as she clean my tears with her palm and I smiled

“ The scholarship, I failed”

“ Do you really wanna attend that university?” she asked

“ Yes it's my dream university, if I attend that university and pass out with good scores, there's a high chance I'm gonna work in a good law firm”

“ Our soon to be attorney” she said and I chuckled

“ Alice....”

“ You know Vinci just got a job as a personal guard to Governor Kim” she said and I nod

“ He's so lucky to have the job”

She smiled “ So I will advice you to wait a little bit” Alice said

“ Alice I'm 20 and again the fees for the university is the same amount of the salary that the governor is paying him so I just don't wanna stress him, you're gonna give birth soon and we're yet to get the baby clothes,,

,everything is just coming together”

“ Chaewon I understand your pains but if you want this scholarship no problem” she said and I smiled

She hugged me and I stroke her back gently as I giggle

“ You can try and apply again” Alice said and something cross my mind immediately

“ Alice wait..” I muttered as I bring out the card from my pocket

“ What's this?? Who gave it to you??”

“ While I was in the washroom a man suddenly showed saying he's gonna give me scholarship and a job in his law firm” I replied

“ Hope it's not fake” she said

“ This is his card and his name is on it, his line and office address is on it” I said

“ Then let's call it” she said

“ He said he's gonna call me” I said and no sooner my phone start ringing

I glance at the id then glance at Alice who's staring at my phone

“ Pick it let's know if he's the one” she said and I pick the call

“ Hwang Chaewon” I heard a deep voice then glance at the number and check if it's the same with the one that's on the card and,,,,it's the same

“ Mr Choi” I said and I could hear him laughing

“ Are you gonna be busy tomorrow?”

“ No sir” I replied

“ Okay good let's meet tomorrow, I will send the address and time” he said

“ Thank you sir”

“ I will call you tomorrow” he said and cut the call

“ What did he say?” Alice asked and I squealed

“ He wants us to meet tomorrow”

“ Chaewon I would love you to follow but I have to go to school tomorrow, the students are having test so I have prepare the questions down” she said and I nod

“ I totally understand, I really can't wait to tell Vinci” I said and she hug me

“ So happy for you but let's see if it's gonna work out well” she said

“ It's definitely gonna work out well”

***** VINCI HOUSE...

Later in the night, I clear the dirty dishes then step out from the kitchen and Vinci was about to stand up from the dining chair when I ran to his side

“ Not yet I have something to tell you”

“ Chaewon” he said and I gave him a puppy face

He groan as he sit on the dining chair and I smiled, I went to sit in front of him then clear my throat before talking

“ Vinci I met an attorney today, he promise to introduce me to someone that's gonna give me scholarship ”

“ You're still after this scholarship thing, I thought you are over it” he said and I rolled my eyeballs

“ Not yet so I need your approval”

“ What's his name??” he asked

“ Choi Jin the CEO of Always law firm”

“ I think I know that man, have seen him with the governor” he said and my face lit up

“ Geez I'm so happy and lucky”

“ So he's gonna introduce you to someone that will give you scholarship” he said and I nod

“ He also promise to give me a job in his law firm”

“ So when are you gonna meet him?” he asked

“ Tomorrow, he's gonna send the time and address” I replied
and he nod

“ Can I go and sleep now” he said and I frown

“ Vinci...”

“ Okay fine what do you want??” he said

“ What I said was it irrelevant??”.

“ No Chaewon it's good it's just that I don't seem to trust that
man, he behaves like a snake whenever he's around the
governor” he replied sharply

“ This is gonna work out well, let's be positive”

“ Don't updating me” he said as he stood and walk away

Gawwwd finally, the scholarship is gonna come back to me I'm
so happy

I stood up from the chair and enter my room which is next to the kitchen, I close the door and turn off the white light leaving the blue light on

My body mount on the bed as I close my eyes and sleep

The next morning, I got no calls from the man, I get off the bed and do my normal routine by cleaning the house and preparation of breakfast

When it was in the afternoon, I was done cleaning the whole house and I got no call from them

Hope this is not a scam cause Vinci is definitely gonna mock me

I spent hours staring at my phone screen and later in the day around 4pm my phone start ringing and I jump on the bed

The id showed up and I smiled “ Good day sir”

“ Check your phone I will send the address to you, I want you to come right now” he said

“ Okay sir” I said and he cut the call

I jump off from the bed as I change my clothe, I wear a baggy jeans with a black top, I hung the bag Alice bought for me last year,,,,I hung round my neck as I rush out of the room

Oh the address, I bring out my phone and check the address, the place is not far

I rush out of the house and lock the door dropping the key under the foot mat, I board a taxi in front of the house

“ Always law firm” I said and he start driving

Gosh I thought he is not gonna call again, I was already losing hope

My mind was going crazy that I was already getting scared, I smiled as I bring out my phone and text Vinci

✉️ Hey on my way to Always law firm” I sent and I got no response

Maybe he's busy, I turn off my phone and drop it in my bag

“ Ma'am we're there” the driver said and I glance through the window to see a big building

I get down from the car and pay the man, I stare at the massive building in front and smiled

“ Always law firm I'm gonna work here soon” I muttered as I smirk, I enter the building and went straight to meet the guards

“ Em' I'm here to see Mr Choi Jin” I said and the guard check me out then laughed

“ Stop lying and get out” he said and I bite my lip

I bring out my phone and call him, he pick the call immediately

“ Sir I'm downstairs”

“ Give the phone to one of the guards” he said and I put the phone on speaker

“ Let her in, you have my permission” Mr Choi Jin said

“ Yes sir” I cut the call and the guard check me out again

“ Enter..” he said and I enter the building fully

“ What's the floor??”

“ 7th floor” he replied and I nod

I ran to the elevator side and press the button, the door open and I enter the elevator then press the 7th button

“ Chaewon you are lucky” I hummed as the elevator read

The door open and I step out, I widened my eyes when I saw Vinci

Wait is the governor here??

I move closer to where he is and he notice my presence

“ Hey Chaewon what are you doing here” he said

“ I'm here to see Mr Choi Jin”

“ Oh that's right” he said as he glance around

“ The governor is here right??”

“ Definitely..” he replied

“ Let me go in, I don't wanna keep them waiting” I said as I walk past him and enter the office

I enter the office and saw Mr Choi Jin with a man

“ Good day” I greeted as I bow and they smiled at me

“ Hwang Chaewon right??” the man said and I nod

“ Oh sorry Chaewon that's the governor, the man that's gonna give you the scholarship” Mr Choi Jin said and I widened my eyes

“ Holy sh*t it's nice meeting you” I said and they smiled

“ Chaewon sit next to him then tell him what you want” Mr Jin said and I nod

I sit next to him smiling and the man move closer to me as he wrap his hand round my waist smiling

“ Sir this is inappropriate, I'm here to talk about the scholarship”

“ Shhh go on, talk I'm listening to you” he said and I nod

“ Sir it's my dream to at....” I trailed my words when his hand reach my butt

“ Governor don't do this” I said and was about to move away from him when he pin me down

“ You know you're sweet and beautiful” he whispered and I try pushing him off my body

He forcefully kiss my lip and I push him away then stood, I was about to run away when I heard something

Choi Jin hold his phone playing a video and I widened my eyes as I watch the video

He just video us right now, he videoed what happened right now

“ You wanna escape and I will release the video claiming you are trying to seduce the governor” he said and my heart break into two at his statement, my eyes become misty

“ You have fallen into my hand so now you can't escape, if you leave I will tell him to upload the video and no scholarship for you” the governor said

“ Is this a threat, are you threatening me?” I half yelled as I let the tears out

“ Make a choice” Choi Jin said

“ I'm leaving and I don't want the scholarship” I said and was about to walk out, I held the door knob tightly

“ Get ready to see yourself on the news” he said and I walk out of his office cleaning my tears

TBC

16

(Tripping for danger...)

He's an animal

Chaewon are a dead meat

I have gotten myself into a big mess

How will I get out from this mess

He fooled me, he tricked me, he's not a good man

I step out of his office as I clean my tears, I saw Vinci standing at the door with a worried expression

“ Are you okay??” he asked with concern and I nod

“ Yeah I'm fine”

“ No you are not cause you are crying” he said and I sigh heavily

“ We will talk at home” I said and walk away, I could feel his eyes on me as I head to the elevator side

I press the button and the door open, I enter the elevator and the door slowly close, I press the first button as the door slowly close

“ What a shameless man, I should have know this sh**t was a set up” I muttered, I step out from the elevator and walk out of the building

I take the public transport bus, I pay through my card then sit at the fifth seat next to the window

He's just bluffing right!??, He can't do anything???, I rest my head on the window as I slowly close my eyes,,, the tears that's threatening to fall later fall freely

“ Unnie...” I heard a baby voice and I opened my eyes immediately to see a baby boy staring at me

“ Do you need anything?”

“ You're crying” he said lowly and I clean my tears facing the other side

“ Chaewon control your emotions” I muttered

Soon the bus arrive at the bus stop and I get down from bus

I start walking going down the street before taking another direction

He's just bluffing about releasing the video, he can't possibly do it right??

A lot of thoughts start running through my mind and I can't help it but cry in my heart, I take the key that's under the mat and unlock the door

I enter the house closing the door as I drop the key on the table, I take off my bag as I enter my room

Chaewon this is just a dream, he can't possibly upload that video to the public, I enter my room and fall on the bed groaning loudly

I slowly close my eyes and sleep, this should probably be a dream

“ You can't escape this, you have fallen into my trap”

That word keep flashing in my head non-stop, I resume sobbing till I fall asleep

I toss round the bed as I could hear a voice, I slowly open my eyes and see Alice staring at me as she smiled

“ You're awake” she said and I sit upright

Alice sit on my small bed smiling, grinning from ear to ear

“ You're smiling”

“ How was it?? Were you able to have it??” she asked and I sigh

Should I tell her that they are blackmailing me

Should I tell her that I'm now a victim

“ Not yet..”

“ Oh I was squealing already” she said and I just nod

“ Is everything alright?” she asked and I nod

“ What says the time??”

“ It's 7pm...” she replied

“ Is he back??”

“ Yeah, he's early today” she replied and I nod

“ You are precious gem” I said and she laughed

“ Come on, let's go outside” she said and I stood up from the bed and walk out of the room with her

I step into the sitting room and saw Vinci eyes glued to the TV

“ Chaewon you need to watch this news” Vinci said and I sluggishly walk over to the couch, I was about to sit down when I saw the news, the video

Wait....d...di... did he upload the video

It's obvious, he already upload the video but my face is blurry and the governor face is blurry and they made the video look as if I was controlling the sexual action

This is what they call madness, he edited the video right??, I fiddle with my fingers as I bite my lip

My heart start beating my fast, I continue fiddling with my fingers as my heart race

“ That girl is shameless, how will she be seducing the man”
Vinci said and I glance at him

Chaewon you're gone, I'm all over the internet and did he just say I'm shameless,,,,, Choi jin

“ Chaewon..” Vinci called and I ran out of the house in tears

I step out of the house and hastily bring out my phone and dial his line

He pick the call “ Oh Chaewon” he said acting as if everything is fine

“ Did you just call my name, you're acting as if everything is fine but it's not fine” I half yelled! as I cry my eyes out

“ We gave you an option but you refused so how was the video” he said

“ I hate you guys, you're a devil”

“ The governor is gonna give you a second chance, come and meet him in his Villa tomorrow by 12 or you see your real face on the news” he said

“ Don't do this, please pity me” I said as I whimper

“ I will send the address to you” he said and cut the call

“ Haaaah Chaewon you're dead” I screamed in pain

My heart is bleeding hard, I can't believe he did that and now he wants to see me tomorrow

“ Chaewon are you okay??” I heard Vinci voice and I hastily clean my tears

“ What are you doing outside??”

“ Why are you screaming?? Are you alright??” he asked and I face him

He pull me closer immediately and stare at me keenly

“ Something is off about you” he said and I push him away then look away

“ Vinci I'm fine”

“ You know you can talk to me” he said

“ Your sister is dying inside, she's dying slowly” I wish I could say that but no word is coming out

“ I need some space” I muttered as I ran inside

“ Chaewon your.....” Alice trailed as I enter my room and lock the door, I remove the key and throw it away

I bring out my phone and search for the latest news, the video is really trending, it's the number 1 search video

“ Governor I hate you” I whimper as I check the comment section

“ Damn she's a bitçh”

“ She deserve a badge”

“ Damn it why will she be seducing a wealthy man even tho the name is not revealed”

“ Baddest bitçh”

“ Stop insulting her, why will someone upload her video on the internet”

“ Is she your girlfriend”

“ He's crushing on that bitçh”

“ Is she your fling??”

I read the comments and burst into a loud tears, biggest mistake ever

He's an animal

He doesn't deserve to be alive

Chaewon let's end his life

A lot of thoughts run through my head as I bite my nails, I scratch my hair and screamed

“ Chaewon are you okay??”

“ Noooo I hate him” I screamed and laughed

“ Chaewon open the door”

“ He's an idiot, I hate him” I screamed and bite my nails hard, I mistakenly bite my fragile skin and sustain a small cut

I'm not feeling any pain cause my emotions is clouded with something else

My mind is going crazy, I'm not getting myself anymore

My emotions are damaged, I scratch my hair as I screamed

“ She called me bitçh, she's insulting me” I yelled!, I screamed

“ Chaewon open the door, it's Vinci”

“ Noooo I hate you all, he's a monster” I yelled as I start breaking things, I throw the pillow on the floor as I break the glass cup that's on the stool, I break my awards on the floor and step on the broken glass

The glass pierce through my skin and I won't stop breaking things, I stop then face the door

“ He assaulted me and now I'm under blackmail” I screamed!! as I keep tilting my neck, scratching my hair hard, biting my lip, slapping my ear hard

“ Chaewon who's blackmailing you??”

“ I hate you, you're a failed brother, I hate you Alice” I yelled as I cried loud, I screamed as I keep slapping my ear screaming

Blood gush out of my foot and,,,,,I heard the sound of the door opening

**

The door open and Chaewon move her eyes to the door, Vinci and Alice stare at her

“ Remember there's a spare key”

Alice glance round the room and find it messy, she widened her eyes when she saw Chaewon injured foot

“ Hey are you okay???” Alice asked as she touch Chaewon foot and she push away hard

“ Hey Chaewon what's wrong with you” Vinci said as he rush to Alice side, he held her hand tightly as he lift her up

Alice hit her back waist as she could feel pains there due to the push

“ I hate you all” Chaewon screamed and Alice move closer to her

She held her shoulder tightly as she stare at her, Alice saw something different in her eyes

“ Why are you looking different” Alice said and Chaewon screamed

“ Grip yourself together, get yourself together” Alice said

“ Why are we a pauper?? Huh!!! He's trying to take advantage of our situation” Chaewon whispered as she laughed

There they could tell she's going crazy, she's not longer herself

“ Do you think I'm happy with everything that's happening, I wish to die to but I have to stay strong for him and the baby” Alice half yelled as she tighten her grip on Chaewon shoulder

“ Shut up, you're a liar”

“ Oh really, should I kill myself for you??” Alice said

“ No I wanna die, I can't bare it any more” Chaewon yelled!

Vinci stood watching them as they yell at each other and he could not move an inch

“ Go and die

Advertisement

I'm not gonna stop you but know something, we're all gonna die together” Alice said and Chaewon flip her hair backward as she sob quietly

“ Get a hold of yourself, I....I.....I.... love you, everything is gonna be fine soon” Alice said as she sob

Chaewon hug her as they sob on each other shoulder

“ Get the first aid kit” Vinci walk away

Alice disengage from the hug as they sit on the bed, Alice clean
Chaewon tears and smiled

“ What's going on?”

“ He's blackmailing me, he assaulted me” Chaewon said lowly

“ Who's that animal”

“ Alice I don't wanna die” she said

“ Chaewon no one is dying, I just want you to open up to me”
Alice said

“ Alice in fine, I can handle it” Chaewon said

Vinci came back with the first aid kit and Alice treat her injury

After treating her, she tucked her into the bed and walked out of the room with Vinci

She came back with a brush and cleaned her room with Vinci, after cleaning her and arranging her room, she walked out of the room with Vinci

“Is she alright?” Vinci asked

“Well actually I think someone is assaulting and blackmailing her” Alice replied as she glanced at Chaewon’s door

“Who’s that bastard??”

“She did not open up, she said she can handle things herself” Alice said and Vinci sighed

“I saw her today at Always law firm about the scholarship stuffs”

“Oh yeah I know about that” Alice said

“But what are you doing in the law firm??” she added

“ The governor was there so being his personal guard I have to follow him everywhere he's going to?? tho I'm not the only guard” he said

“ Huh!!!”

“ The governor have four personal bodyguard so I was with him today till around 6pm” Vinci said

“ He release you early today” Alice said

“ He's busy with political career” Vinci replied

“ I need to sleep so I can get ready for the test” Alice said as she enter the room hitting her back waist

“ Does it still hurt?” Vinci asked and she nod without glancing back

“ Badly, I need a massage” she said and Vinci chuckled

“ Just lie on the bed”

Alice lie on the bed backing Vinci who gently sit on the bed and rest his hands on her waist

Vinci gently massage her back as she moan gently, his hands magically massage her back and she smiled in relief

He move his face to her side cheek then plant a soft kiss on it, he kiss her cheek then move his lip to her lip

“ Finally it's tonight” Alice said and he chuckled

The following day, Alice is out, she went to school and Vinci is the out too leaving Chaewon at home

She lock herself in ther room as she weep silently, she watch as the clock move from 10am -12pm

She covered her face with her palm as she sigh heavily

“ Swears I hate my life” she muttered

No sooner her phone start ringing and she glance at the id, she hastily pick the call

“ Check your phone, I have send the address” Choi Jin said and cut the call without waiting for her reply

Chaewon sluggishly stood from the floor and enter the washroom, she went to have her bath and after bathing she wearing a black baggy jeans with a white top

She carry her bag and walk out of the house, she drop the key under the footmat and take a cab to his Villa

“ Hong Joo road” she said and the driver nod before he start driving

“ Goodness my life is over, I'm in a big mess and I need to get myself out of this mess but how will I do that” she muttered silently

She cover my face with my two palm and sigh heavily

“ Yesterday was not good for me but I hope today will be good”
she muttered

Few minutes later, “ Ma'am we're there” the driver said and
Chaewon open her eyes

She get down from the car and pay the man before tracing the
address, she saw a small white building with four cars parked in
front of it

“ That should be his damn Villa” she muttered as she bring out
her phone, she dial his line

“ Where are you?” she asked lowly

“ Enter the white house” Choi Jin replied and cut the call

“ I hope the pleas work out well” she muttered

She enter the building and saw three men there, the governor
and two other men

“ Mr governor ” Chaewon called as she enter the sitting room fully

“ My pretty lady” the governor said and she scoff at his statement, his statement is irritating her

“ Are you happy now, I'm all over the internet receiving hateful words from netizen and you're chilling,,,,, like a villain as you are” Chaewon said and the governor laughed as he glance at the two men sitting in front of him

“ My pretty lady meet senator Jung and Assembly man Lee” the governor said and she scoff

“ What do you want to tell me”

“ At least have your seat” she heard Choi Jin voice and glance at back

“ I should have my seat so you can video me again” she said and Choi Jin chuckled

He walk past her heading to bar room as he bring out a bottle of Hennessy with four glass cup

Choi drop the Hennessy and cups on the table then stand at the back of the governor

“ Chaewon have your seat so we can get straight to business” senator Jung said and she glance at him

She sit on the third couch, she glance at the governor who's on her right hand side then glance at senator Jung with Assembly man Lee who's on her left hand side

“ What do you wanna” Chaewon said

“ Can we have a drink before talking” the governor said and gesture at Choi Jin

He pour the Hennessy into the cups then went to sit on the couch next to the governor

“ Have your drink” the governor said and Chaewon look away

Immediately senator Jung bring out a whitish substance, he pour a little inside her drink and hastily hide it

Chaewon face them back and glance at each of them face

“ Don't upload the original video” she said

“ Have your drink” Assembly man Lee said and she slowly take the wine cup then sip a little

Chaewon drop the cup down “ Can we now talk??”

“ Chaewon you know you are beautiful” the governor said

“ No I'm ugly like a gorilla” she replied sharply and they chuckled

“ No you are beautiful” senator Jung said and she glance at him, her eyes started getting tipsy

Everywhere is turning upside as she yawn, she slowly close her eyes and her head fall on the couch

“ So fast...” Assembly man Lee said said

“ Are you expecting it to be slow” the governor said

“ Who's starting first??”

“ Let Choi Jin clear the road for us cause I'm sure she will be pretty tight” the governor replied

AUTHORESS MIDE BOOKS, COPY AND DIE PREMATURELY

!! ☐ !! ☐ !! ☐

Chaewon pov

The sound of a loud ringing tone made me to open my eyes immediately and I find myself on a king sized bed

I glance around wondering where I am, the white duvet is stained with blood

Wait,,,,,,,,, hope it's not what I'm thinking

This should be a dream, if this is a dream someone should please wake me up

I glance down and I'm naked on the bed, I lift the duvet up and widened my eyes

Chaewon you're a goner

You are in their trap

How did I fall asleep??,,or,,,, wait....the,,,, HENNESSY

I glance at my left hand side and saw a phone on the table, I glance around and saw my bag on the floor, I try to move when I felt a sharp pain that draw me back

“ Damn it!!!, Damn those pains” I cursed beneath my breathe, I crawl on the bed and stretch my hand to take my bag that's on the floor

I take my bag and bring out my phone, I crawl back to where I saw the phone and search through the phone there I saw some gruesome pictures and video

This people are inhuman

They are heatless

I hastily send the gruesome videos and pictures to my phone before anyone comes in, I clear the search history and I was about to off my phone when the door, I hastily drop my phone down with my heart beating fast

“ Oh you are awake but seriously you are damn sweet” Choi Jin as he take step forward and I spit on his face with my heart beating fast

The next thing I receive a resounding slap on my cheek, a slap on my cheek twice

“ Did you just hit me”

“ I was complimenting you and the next thing you can do is to spit on my face” he said coldly sending a shiver to my body but I wave it aside immediately

“ This girl here don't need your compliment, I swear you all will pay for this”

“ What are you gonna do to us?? You're a powerless girl” he said laughing and I crawl on the bed as I put on my clothe back, put my phone in my trouser pocket and carry my bag

“ We shall see our about that”

“ You're just bluffing, don't tell me you don't enjoy it” he said and I scoff feeling irritated at his statement

“ Did you just say enjoy??, You guys drugged me then raped me in a painful and you want me to call that enjoyment”

“ Stop pretending” he said

“ Tell your stupid governor to watch out, I will fight for myself till the whole world hear my cry”

“ And I will release your s£x tape” he said laughing devilishly

“ Go ahead it, enough of your blackmail”

“ This is not a blackmail, it's the fact” he said and I scoff

“ Did you just say fact, that shameless man raped a girl enough to be his daughter and you are here smiling happily”

“ We all did, we all have a taste of you but to be sincere you are so sweet, can we have more some other time” he said and I scoff

“ There won't be an another time”

“ What about your scholarship” he said

“ I don't want it anymore”

“ But you come this far” he said smiling, I know he's definitely mocking me

“ Even tho I have come this far, I know you guys are still not gonna give me the scholarship, you're just gonna use it to threaten me same with the video”

“ Smart girl, you're book smart but not street smart” he said

“ We shall see about that”

17

Chaewon take the public bus and she sit next to the window and she could hear people talking about the video

Have he post the original clip, she hastily bring out my phone and saw the yesterday video as the number 1 search history

The video is trending badly and it's really affecting her even tho her face was blurry, those words are still affecting her

Emotion damaged

“ She's a cat bitçh”

“ I heard rumors that girl is a call girl”

“ Shut up does the video look as if she's a call girl”

“ Idiot the person that posted it called her a bitçh”

Those were the words she was hearing from the high school students, the bus stop moving and she hastily press the red button

Chaewon rush down from the bus and ran, she's feeling insecure about walking

“ This is not what I hope for” she muttered as she keep running until a guy stopped her with his arm

“ Young lady” he called as he stare at her keenly and Chaewon hastily push his hands away off her body

“ I don't know you” she rush her words as she try to run away but the guy stopped her again

“ Where are you running to???, Someone asked me to pin you down” he said and her heart skip a beat

“ Who?? Who?? Who?? Did he follow me here??” Chaewon said rushing her words and the guy rolled his eyeballs

“ Hey I'm talking about my teacher, Lee Alice” the guy said as he point at Alice who's standing over the street having difficulty in crossing the road

Chaewon sight her then sigh heavily, she glance at the high school boy then glance at Chaewon

“ Oh you can go” she muttered and the high school boy nod then walk away wearing his earpiece

Alice finally cross the road and hurried to Chaewon side smiling, she got to her side then hug her

“ Why were you running like a crazy girl” Alice said and Chaewon just close her eyes breathing out

“ I was scared no sorry I'm scared” Chaewon said

“ Scared of what??” Alice asked as she disengage from the hug and they start walking holding hands

“ A lot is happening to me but I don't have the mouth to say it out” Chaewon muttered

“ Chaewon you can talk to me, I won't tell Vinci if you don't want him to know about the matter” Alice said softly

“ Alice actually th...” she trailed her voice, her mind went blank and no words is coming out, she open her talk again but no words came out

“ Say something” Alice said

“ Nothing is coming out” she muttered

“ Can you write it down or do a hand signal” Alice said and Chaewon mind suddenly went back to that ugly incident, those words they are saying about her even tho they are yet to see her face, her eyes become misty

“ Alice it's hard to say it hard” Chaewon whispered as she sob silently

“ Are you under trauma?” Alice asked as they enter the building

“ He traumatized me, he said he's gonna release the original clip, he touch me” Chaewon screamed as hot tears roll down
She start hitting her ear as she scream and Alice hastily push her in and lock the door

“ Chaewon get yourself together” Alice said and she screamed hitting her ear hard

“ They called me bitch, why are am I so stupid?? I fell for the trap, they raped me” she screamed and Alice widened her eyes at her last statement

“ Who raped you??” she asked as she hold her shoulder tightly

“ He's a bad man, he's gonna kill me” Chaewon said as she screamed, she raise her hand and start moving her finger,,,,, doing a hand signal

Alice keenly watch as her hand move spelling a name out

“ K - I - M” Alice said and Chaewon hand stop moving, she ran inside her room and lock the door immediately

“ Hey Chaewon open the door” Alice said and she heard a scream

“ What message is she trying to pass to me?” Alice said as she open her bag and bring out a notepad with a pen

She did the hand signal that Chaewon did and she end up spelling a name out “ KIM”

“ Who the hell is Kim” Alice wondered as her eyes move to her door

“ Kim,,,,, Choi Jin,,,,,, Vinci boss governor Kim,,,,,he saw her with governor” she muttered as she scribble those words down

“ I saw her with the governor”

“ He called me a bitçh”

Those words cross her mind and she relate them together

“ Wait did the governor rape her??” Alice said aloud as she glance at the name she jot down on the notepad, she glance at her door

“ What the hell is going on?”

***** LATER IN THE NIGHT

Chaewon pov

I spent hours in the room crying as I pour out my pains in my diary, the videos I stole from his phone, I went through it and saw a horrified videos and pictures, I send everything to the SD card and keep it in the diary

“ This evidence is gonna help me achieve my aim” I muttered as I keep my diary in the drawer just then I heard a soft knock on the table

“ Chaewon open up it's Vinci” he said

“ I don't wanna talk to you”

“ Alice told everything that happened, the hand signal and everything, did the governor hurt you??” he said and I rush to the door and open it

“ Vinci yes he hurt me, he deceived me, he raped me” I said rushing my words

“ Why will he do that, he can never do that to you” Vinci said and I scoff

“ So you don't believe, you wanna believe that animal”

“ What were you doing with him in the first place, wait did you sell your body to him” he said

“ Vinci you know I can never do that” I half yelled

“ Then where's that lie coming from, who's that bastard that's hurting you”

“ It's the governor” I yelled

“ Stop lying against that innocent man that's kind to me” he said

“ Should I show you an evidence”

“ Evidence that you framed up” he said and I could feel my head exploding

“ I can't believe this is coming from your mouth”

“ Chaewon it's not like that, I mean who will believe the bullshit you are saying”

“ You don't believe her but I believe her cause I'm feeling her pains, you were not there today when she was running like a crazy girl” Alice said and I glance at her

“ Don't support her” Vinci said and walk out of the room

“ Chaewon I will talk to him, we're gonna get justice for you” Alice said and I nod

“ Justice, I can never get a justice cause they're definitely gonna get away with it”

“ Don't say that, I will get the best lawyer for you” Alice said.

“ No instead of getting a lawyer

Advertisement

why don't you use the money to bury me”

“ Chaewon stop saying negative words you are not gonna die”

Alice said

“ With this trauma and pains, the video that's circulating online, I'm the girl in the video and you want me to be fine like that”

“ Chaewon you're gonna be fine trust me” Alice said

“ I made a mistake doing a hand signal to you, I should have know he's not gonna believe me”

“ Chaewon you know how he behaves, I will talk to him” she said

“ There's no need for that cause I'm gonna die soon, I can't live the trauma even tho I know I acted foolishly”

“ Chaewon...”

“ Excuse me” I said as I gently push her out and lock the door

Swearz I hate my life, he doesn't believe me, he's seeing me as a liar and I'm not a liar

What have this bastard man done to my brother, what have he done to him

I slowly fall on the floor and cry my eyes, pour out my emotions

TWO WEEKS LATER

VINCI'S HOUSE..... 7pm

Chaewon pov

I roll off the bed as I scratch my hair, what happened yesterday is still a shock to me and Alice,,,, she's the best, she's better than my grumpy brother, I open the drawer and bring out the paper next to my diary, I opened it and read the content over and over

“ The doctor is sick, how can I be pregnant for those monsters” I muttered as I squeeze the paper and throw it back inside the drawer

How can a baby be growing in my tummy and those monsters will be the father, gibberish

My phone start ringing and I glance at the id, Choi Jin

So he can finally call after I blackmailed him, I threaten to release the video if he doesn't tell the world their evil deeds, I'm sure girls are suffering because of their evil deeds and I won't let that go on

I pick the call “ Chaewon take that video down”

“ No never, take my video down and tell the world your evil deeds” I said

“ Chaewon you know that's not possible” he said and I scoff

“ You created a big trauma in girls heart and you think you guys can get away with it”

“ Okay fine let's meet” he said and I scoff

“ No never and tell that monster I'm pregnant for him”

“ Are you drunk or what???, How can you be pregnant” he half yelled

“ Stop yelling at me”

“ Chaewon let's meet” he said

“ So you can rape me again”

“ Let's meet so I will delete the video in front of you and you're gonna delete the video in front of me too” he said

“ Where should we meet??”

“ Always law firm rooftop” he replied

“ Deal...”

“ Let's meet tonight” he said and I cut the call

I drop my phone on the bed and walk out of the room to see Vinci setting the table

“ You're here” he said and I ignores him

“ Chaewon I'm saying something” he said

“ Why are you talking to a liar, why are you talking to a bitch??”

“ Is this seriously gonna go on, you have talk to me for the past two weeks” he said and I scoff

“ You don't deserve to be my brother cause you are not acting like one”

“ Okay I retract my statement” he said

“ Don't force yourself to believe me”

“ Chaewon I'm sorry” he said and I glance at him

“ You failed as a brother”

“ We can take him to court, we can sue him to court” he said
and I scoff

“ Vinci it's over two weeks already so just forget about it”

“ Chaewon I'm sorry for not believing you, I can't believe the
man will do such a thing not until I caught him forcing himself
on a young girl” he said

“ You're spitting gibberish out”

“ Chaewon...” he called

“ It was only Alice that helped me out, we took the case to the
police station but they dismissed it giving us a flimsy excuse and
now you are here telling me sorry, they dismissed the case
cause those monsters have upper hands”

“ You have every right to be mad at me, I'm sorry”

“ Chaewon you can't be mad at him forever” I heard Alice voice and glance back to see her carrying big box

I rush to her side and collect the box from her then drop it on the floor

“ Why are you carrying heavy things?”

“ I'm sorry about that” she said smiling and I chuckled

“ Alice it's fine”

“ How's your health??, Your mental health??” she asked

“ The video is still going viral and I think I'm getting better”

“ Stop lying, I do hear you cry every night” she said

“ You caught me but why can't you come in”

“ I'm just giving you space, giving you space to think and cry your eyes out” she replied

“ Chaewon...” Vinci called

“ I have every evidence about the governor and Vinci I will like you to follow me to Always law firm”

“ To do what??”

“ When you get there you are gonna know” I replied and enter my room

I take my black jacket and walk out of Vinci, I glance back and saw him wearing a black face cap

We board a taxi to Always law firm and the ride did not take long

We arrive at the law firm and get down from the car, Vinci pay for the transport before entering the building

I could see some people walking around, my dream to be a lawyer is gonna crash because of those monsters

“ Chaewon who are you gonna meet” Vinci asked

“ Choi Jin, I'm pregnant” I said and he held my hand immediately

“ You mean a baby is growing in your tummy” he said and I nod

“ I want them to know they have a child somewhere”

“ Chaewon let's go back”

“ No never, we have to end this bullsh**t, I can't face this trauma anymore” I said as my eyes become misty

“ Chaewon let's go back home, I will handle things from here” he said and I remove his hand away from my hand then press the elevator button

The door open and I enter the elevator, he followed me and I press the last button

“ Vinci you failed as a brother but it's fine, I won't blame you instead I will blame myself but I can't live with this pain, I can't bare a child for those monsters”

“ Chaewon everything is gonna be fine, what if you die” he said

“ I don't f**king care cause I'm dead already”

The elevator door open and I step out, he reluctantly followed me,

We climb the stairs and I find a door, I open the door and I was welcome with a breeze

“ Damn this cold” he cursed as we enter the rooftop fully

I saw a laptop on a table “ Vinci go and hide” I said

“ Why???”

“ Just go and hide” I said and he walk away

As soon as he went to hide the door open and Choi Jin entered smiling

“ My pretty lady” he called and I scoff

“ Delete the video right now”

“ Why are you rushing??” he said laughing

“ Delete the video” he said and I take a step backward, he keep moving forward and I keep backward till my back hitting the rail

“ So now escape” he said and I gulp down nervously

“ Delete the video and I will delete yours then tell the governor to apologize to me”

“ You're spitting gibberish, why will he apologize to you and why will you be pregnant” he said and take a step forward and I take a step backward climbing the small brick that's holding the rail

“ Are you really asking me that dumb question, anyways he said I should bury you so good bye” he said and held my neck tightly

She could see Vinci coming out from his hiding spot holding a stick, he hit it on Jin's head and he suddenly leave Chaewon neck immediately she lost her balance and fell off the building
Chaewon fell off the building, she fell on the big diamond that's outside the law firm used for decoration, the diamond stabbed her hard and blood gush out

The diamond broke and the blood splash making people passing by to scream

Vinci watch as Chaewon fell off the building and his eyes become misty

Jin regain himself and glance around, he could not find Chaewon instead he saw a guy screaming

“ What happened??”

“ She fell off the building are you happy now” Vinci growled, he stood and ran downstairs

He took the elevator and soon he got outside, he saw people talking pictures of Chaewon and he widened his eyes when he

saw how horrible how body is, there's a hole on her tummy
cause he could see the diamond sharp side sticking out of her
tummy

PRESENT.....DAY... 10pm

“ The story was damn boring” Scott said and Shadow scoff

“ So what happened?” Swan asked

“ She died and the so called Choi Jin clear up the case” Sullivan
replied

“ I think I have heard of that case” Swan said and Shadow nod

“ Your sister acted stupidly” the guy next to Scott said

“ Repeat your statement” Shadow said coldly

“ Your sister acted stupidly”

“ It's normal for someone to be stupid right??” Swan said and they all glance at her

“ Why are you staring at me”

“ Emotion damaged” Sullivan said and walk away

“ Are you supporting them??” Shadow said as he walk away

“ Hey don't leave me alone with this scary men”

18

❖ WILD

ASSASSIN □

(Tripping for danger...)

Swan pov

I followed him to the room and he close the door on my face, I breathe out as I enter his room and close the door

“ You close the door on my face” he ignored me as he take off his top and wear a big shirt then sit on the bed

“ Vinci I'm saying something” he ignored me

“ Stop ignoring me” he glance at me then look away as he lit up the cigarette

I take the cigarette away from his lip and blow off the light

“ I'm talking to you and you're smoking ”

“ Are you supporting them??” he said coldly and the cigarette fell off from my hand

“ No I'm not”

“ It's normal for someone to be stupid, f**k you” Vinci said icily as he stood and was about to walk out of the room when I held his arm

“ The statement made you angry, I'm sorry about that” I said and he walk away without saying anything

This silent treatment is what I don't like, I followed him downstairs as he enter the kitchen

I could not find those men in the living room but I could see Sullivan locking the dark room door

“ He's mad at you” Sullivan muttered as he walk past me, I hastily rush to the kitchen and I met him opening the fridge, I

went to hug him from behind and his hand froze, I could hear him sighing as he close the fridge

He slowly remove my hands away then turn around and face me

“ Vinci I'm sorry, I did not mean to utter that statement, I was just trying to ease the tension”

“ Are you a human??? Don't you have human feelings, my sister die a painful death and all you could do is to crack a joke” he whispered and I could see those pains in his eyes

“ I'm sorry..”

“ Kim Swan....” he called

“ Vinci I'm sorry, I don't want you to be mad at me”

“ Give me some space” he said and walk away, I watch as he walk over to the fridge that's in the living room and bring out a bottle of water

He glance at me then walk away, I could feel my heart breaking into two, breaking into million pieces

I don't want him to mad at me, I walk out of the kitchen and went to sit on the tiles resting my head on the glass table

“ He's mad at me, Sullivan is cold towards me, his emotions changes like a rainbow” I muttered

“ Are you gonna sleep here” I heard his voice and I raise my head to see Sullivan staring at me

“ Do you need anything??”

“ He's still mad at you right??” he said and I nod

“ He said he need some space”

“ You shouldn't have utter that statement” he said as he sit on the couch

“ I was just trying to ease the tension”

“ This is the result” he said and I glance at him

“ Can you show me those evidences?”

“ Sure why not” he said and he turn on the TV, Sullivan held the remote as he control it

A video start playing and I keenly watch it, I could hear my Dad's voice and I glance at Sullivan

“ That's Chaewon” he said and I face the TV

I watch as they gruesomely have s£x with her as she laid motionless on the bed

“ Clean her up” I heard my Dad's voice

“ Why cleaning her up, she's gonna clean herself up” I heard Assemblyman Lee voice

“ What a bitçh!” I heard senator Jung voice

“ Choi Jin stop the video” I heard my Dad's voice and the video end

“ Is that's all??”

“ There's more, your mother's own is there too” he said and my heart skip a beat

He play a video and I could see how my father hit a woman hard and my heart sink down

” Don't tell me that's my mother” I said lowly as I break into a silent tears

“ You guys look like like with the same personality” Sullivan said and I just watch as my father battered her

“ Stop the video” I half yelled and he turn off the video, I can't bare to watch to watch it cause the video is horrible, it's terrifying

“ Swan...” he called and I stood from the floor and walk away heading upstairs, I enter a room and close the door

I fall on the bed and close my eyes then sob loudly, he's a shameless, I regret having him as a father

He's a disappointment, I can vouch for him anywhere not knowing he's an horrible man, I sob loudly and I heard a loud knock on the door

“ Sullivan let me be”

“ He doesn't want you to watch the video cause it's horrible and at the same time he wants you to watch the video so you can know his true color” Sullivan said and I get down from the bed, I went to sit on the tiles resting my head on the door as I sob

“ Sullivan tell him I'm sorry, tell him I'm sorry for not believing him, tell him I'm sorry for not taking his sister's issue serious”

“ Swan...”

“ I deserve every torture he's giving me, now I know the reason why he said I can't love him, the reason why he can't love me, we don't deserve each other” I said and another tears roll down

“ My father hurt him, he made life miserable for him, he killed his only siser so I think he should go on with the torture, I deserve it”

“ Sullivan tell him I'm sorry”

“ Tell that to him face to face ” Sullivan said and I cleaned my tears my palm

“ I'm sorry ” I said as I stood and fall on the bed, I close my eyes and sob silently

Vinci pov

I step out from my room and I could hear voices, her voice

“ Sullivan stop the video” I heard her voice and I rest on the wall resting my back as I eavesdrop on what they're saying

“ Swan...” Sullivan said and I heard nothing else, there I saw Swan climbing the stairs as she walk past me

She did not see me, I glance at her back view and face front only to see Sullivan standing in front of me

“ I thought you were sleeping” he said

“ You showed her the video”

“ She wants to see the video” he said

“ Everything???”

“ Only Chaewon and her Mom's video” he replied and I nod

“ Vinci is she gonna be okay?” he added

“ She can't kill herself” I said as we climb the stairs heading to Garam's room, she entered Garam's room

“ Communicate with her” I said and he cleared his throat

I rest on the door and listen as they communicate, I could hear her cry

She's feeling remorseful about everything, I regret telling her to give me some space

“ Swan you are wrong, I don't want you to love me cause I'm scared of the walls that's separating us, my health issues and everything is making me scared to admit my love”

“ Will the love last long if I admit to it, are we gonna stay together forever?? I'm gonna accept the fact that I love you but will it last long when I have limited time on earth on earth”

“ Thyroid cancer, I'm sure it's gonna be at the last stage and I'm not sure if I'm gonna survive it, the cure and everything is just....” I breathe out heavily as I could feel tears rolling down

“ Vinci are you crying??” I heard Sullivan voice and I hastily clean my tears

“ No I'm not, go and sleep” I said as I enter the room and I met her sleeping peacefully on the bed

I drag the thick stool closer to her side and seat on it then held her hand tightly

“ I love you” I muttered and kiss her the back of her hand, I could see her sleeping as she change her position, she face me as she slowly open her eyes and close it back

“ I know you can't be mine” I muttered and watch as she sleep, I kiss her forehead and lip then tuck her properly, I walk out of the room switching off the light and met Sullivan resting on the wall

“ Do you love her that much?” Sullivan asked as he glance at me

“ I love her even tho I know it's not suppose to happen”

“ Erase the love” he said and I glance at him

“ Sullivan...” I called and he walk away heading to his room, he enter his room and I followed him in closing the door

“ Vinci you can't love her” Sullivan said as he face me

“ Sullivan...”

“ Her father killed and raped Chaewon, he crashed her dream without glancing back so now you wanna have his daughter, forget about the love and focus on that monster” he said and I take my lip in

“ Everyday I wake up in morning, my first wish is for that man to die

I want him to suffer and beg for the death but Swan...”

“ Don't use her as an excuse, delete the love and focus on the father, let him feel that pain you are feeling, let his family feel it” he said

“ So I should not love her”

“ You can love her but I hope he doesn't use her as a bait to catch you” he said and back me

“ Your mindset is that of an adult own”

“ I will be waiting for your order” he said

“ Where's Haeun???”

“ She's in the other room” he replied and I sluggishly walk out of his room, the room next to his room, I unlock the pin and enter the room

I saw Haeun rolling on the bed with her eyes closed, she was about to break down in tears when I rush to her side and lay next to her, I carry her and stroke her back gently

She slowly close her eyes as resume her sleep, I slap my forehead as I sigh heavily

I should not love her

Her father is a bad man

But I can't help it...

THE NEXT MORNING ☹️☹️☹️

THE GOVERNOR'S MANSION...

Juran pov

I flip my hair backward as I humm silently to a song, I carry my phone and walk out of the room

Beaver is really trending and I love it like that

That serves her right??? Crazy bitçh with zero respect

I enter the dining room and saw everyone having breakfast, I gently sit next to Ethel and dig into the food

“ Juran I saw the news” Ethel said

“ How's that my business” I said with glancing at him

“ There's a rumour circulating online that Beaver and Aldo are dating” my mom said and I chuckled

“ How do you expect me to know, do I look like Beaver”

“ Juran your manners” Dad said and I rolled my eyeballs

“ I'm sorry Mom”

“ There's another rumor circulating online that you are in a relationship with Aldo” Dad said and I stop eating

“ Why will I be in a relationship with that riffraff”

“ Juran he's Swan fianceé” Ethel said

“ Oh you mean Swan the illegitimate child, the girl that get all the attention in the house, that dead girl”

“ My daughter is not dead so stop saying rubbish” Dad yelled as he hit his hand on the table

“ You're yelling at my daughter cause that bastard” Mom said

“ She's better than everyone in this house so watch your words” Dad said as he stood and walk out of the room with his flies following him behind, I'm talking about his annoying guards

“ I hate this morning” I muttered as I stood and walk out of the dining room, I went straight upstairs to my room and take my car key then went downstairs back

Where's Yiga???

Where's that ugly animal???

Is she not suppose to be my side every minute

Personal assistant under my foot

I unlock the car door, enter it then drive out of the compound heading straight Beaver house, I call her line and she pick the call

“ Yo bitçh”

“ You're happy with everything that's happening right??” she said and I rolled my eyeballs

“ Duh!!! Where are you??”

“ On the mountain praying for your death” she replied coldly and I scoff

“ Beaver...”

“ Why did you call??, Go and have fun with Aldo” she said and cut the call

“ Immature bitçh” I cursed as I change direction heading to Aldo's Mansion, I head straight to his Mansion and I was about to reach there when I saw the paparazzi in front of his Mansion

“ What's going on??”

I drive past his house and I could see paparazzi stretching to see if they peep into his house

Wait are they right???

Hope I'm not on the news

I drive far away from his house and make sure no paparazzi is following me behind, I hastily bring out my phone and check for the latest news

Aldo and Beaver are really trending, how did their secret affair leak out???

Hope those netizen won't tag along into this dirty drama

I ignite the car engine and resume driving heading to the cosmetic company

Swan pov

The voice of a lady woke me up, I forcefully open my eyes to see Garam staring at me

“ Arrgghh” I startled as she chuckled

“ You're on my bed” she said and I made the oh sound

“ Sorry I thought it was an empty room” I said and get down from the bed, I was about to walk away when she held my hand

“ Have your bath before leaving” she said and I nod, I enter her washroom and close the door, I rest my back on the door and memories of yesterday flashed in

Yesterday was horrible for me

Chaewon's story, Vinci snobbishness and Sullivan coldness

How will I face them?

I slowly take off my clothes and filled the bathtub with warm soapy water before entering it, I clean my body thoroughly and shortly I was done, I drain the water out and fill another warm soapy water inside the tub

Hope she's gonna like it

I step out of the washroom tying a towel round my body and I saw her arranging some clothes on the bed

“ Garam....” she glance at me then smiled

“ Pick the clothe you want” she said and my eyes glance through the clothe

“ I will go for the jeans skirt and top” she smiled

“ Good choice” she said and I chuckled

“ Garam I prepared a warm soapy water in the bathtub so I don't know you will like it”

“ Who won't love it, I'm feeling pains all over my body so thanks for the water” Garam said as she wink at me before entering the washroom

“ So jovial”

I wear the new set of undies that's on the bed before wearing my clothes, a blue jeans with a tank top, I use the towel to dry my hair then comb my hair

Swan you need to wash this towel and that dirty clothe, I don't wanna bother her with my problem

I take the clothe and towel and step out from her room just then I heard the sound of a door, I glance to my right hand side to see Vinci coming out from his room

“ Swan he said he need some space so let's give him the space” I muttered and walk away, I walk past him when I felt someone pulling me back

“ Am I now invisible” Vinci said and I remove his hand away from my tank top

“ Last night you said you need some space so now I'm giving you the space” I said

“ Swan about that...” he trailed

“ Vinci I'm sorry” I said and walk away

I saw Sullivan coming out from the kitchen as I walk down the stairs

“ Sullivan...”

“ Kim Swan” he said

“ Where's the laundry room??”

“ Next to the pool” he replied and walk past me

I walk over to the pool side and I saw no laundry machine

“ Where's the laundry room, he said next to the pool” I said aloud as I peep into the pool

“ He mean the door next to the pool” I heard his voice and I slowly tilt my neck to see Vinci staring at me, his face is pretty close and I startled

I was about to fall when he grab my waist pulling me closer to his body

“ Why are you flinching?” he said as he stare at me as if he's looking for a ruby in my eyes

“ No...Not..... Nothing” I stuttered as I regain my posture and push him away

“ Swan....”

“ Thanks for the direction” I said as I hurriedly enter the room and close the door on his face

Why is he coming close when he wants me to give him space

He's good at confusing emotions

I walk over to the laundry machine, I open it and throw the clothe inside it then pour some soap and water inside it before pressing the button

The clothes start rolling and I flinch when I turn around

“ Why are you scaring me” I said and he smiled brightly

He look handsome that cute smile, my eyes move to his neck and I could see a lump there

The size of the lump is just increasing daily, he hastily use his turtle neck top to cover the lump

“ Why are you covering what I have seen”

“ Kim Swan” he called

“ What do you want??”

“ I'm sorry for ignoring you, I don't need any f**king space” he said as I he take a step forward and I take a step backward hitting my back on the machine

“ You're close”

“ I need to be close to you so Haeun can have a junior brother” he whispered and I choke on my saliva

“ W.....Wh....Wha.....What are you saying”

“ Swan I love you” he said and I gulp down heavily with my heart beating fast

“ Don't force to love me and moreover did Sullivan deliver my message to you”

“ I was with him when you were talking so I heard everything clearly” he said

“ Since you heard everything I think now I don't deserve you, let's get rid of this feelings”

“ Can you cope with this feelings, can you do without me” he said

“ I know it will be difficult but with time I will be over it”

“ Oh really” Vinci said as he lift my left leg closer, he held it firm as my kneecap reach his waist

My left leg hold firmly onto his waist as his hand travel down to my lap, he stroke my lap as he move it down to my waist line

“ Hey what are you doing, someone can burst in”

“ Just confirming something, I don't trust those four men” he whispered as his hand move my panties apart and thrust two fingers in

“ Ouch!! Vinci” I moaned as I hold his shoulder tightly and he stare at me

He slowly thrust in then later he increase his pace and I bite my lip hard to stop myself from moaning loud

“ Hey don't injure those sweet lip” he said and I hug him tight resting my head on my shoulder as I moan on his body

“ Are you really gonna get rid of those feelings?” he said and I moaned

“ No why will I do that, I love you” I moaned

“ Are you sure??”

“ Damn Vinci” I moaned

“ Super tight so you're still intact for me” he said and I squirt on his hand

I sigh heavily as he let go of my legs and lick his finger smiling

“ Vinci I hate you” I said as I adjust my skirt

“ But I love you” he said smiling

“ What about my father?”

“ Still gonna deal with him and his men but that won't stop my feelings for you” he said and I look away

“ You love your enemy's daughter”

“ Swan don't feel remorseful about what happened, it's not your fault and I don't need any f**king space” he said

“ Vinci...”

“ I don't want us to fight because of that monster, we're gonna make it through and I will make sure I stay by your side forever”
he said

“ Why are you sounding like a dying man”

“ Nothing, just forget about that monster, I'm your only family okay” he said and I nod

He hug me tightly and I slowly hug him back, he's right I don't longer have a family

Father, he's a disappointment there's no word I can use to qualify him cause he's everything

Juran wants me dead

Karina is just a shyster

Beaver is a definition of a betrayer

Aldo is an animal

Ethel, I barely know him cause we hardly talk, I don't know his intention about me

And Yiga, a true definition of the word sister

“Swan I love you” Vinci said

“I don't love you” I said and he disengage from the hug

“Are you kidding me” he said pouting his lip sweetly and I can't help it but laugh

The door open and I divert my eyes to the door, I saw Sullivan standing at the entrance

“I love him” I said and point at Sullivan

“ Why will you love me” Sullivan said as he glance at me then glance at Vinci

Vinci slowly tilt his neck and glared at Sullivan “ Are you sharing my woman”

“ Dude trust me” Sullivan said and Vinci start walking over to his side and Sullivan ran out

I laughed as they ran out of the laundry room, what a pure soul unlike my family

Hope this won't be a sad love story

19

After drying the clothes, I went back inside the living room and saw Vinci drinking water

He gulp the water then touch his neck, his expression change as he drop the water on the table then run upstairs, I glance at the water then glance at the stairs

Is he okay???

Hope everything is alright??

I walk over to the dining table and drink the water, the taste is okay so what could be wrong

“ Vinci...” I heard Sullivan voice and I raise my head, he's wearing an apron holding glass plate that's filled with chicken

“ He's upstairs”

“ Oh,,,,I wanted him to taste the chicken” he said

“ I can help you out”

“ Do you know how to cook?? Have you ever enter the kitchen before??” Sullivan said as he stare at me weirdly

“ Ouch mistake! I will just go back to the room” I said and he turn back inside without saying anything

Why is he cold towards me but free with others, does he hate me??

“ Sullivan...” I called as I enter the kitchen

“ Kim Swan” he said without glancing at me

“ What do you want??” he added

“ Let me help you out”

“ Beat the egg” he said and I nod

I beat four eggs into a deep glass plate then stir it

“ Swan...” he called and I glance at him

“ You want us to talk” I said as I move away from the egg, I gently sit on the stool and rest my jaw on my hand

“ It's about Vinci...” he trailed

“ Go on”

“ Did he tell you anything?? The lump on his neck” he said

“ He's yet to spill the beans out”

“ Nevermind...” Sullivan said as he twitch his lip

“ Is this your personality??. Your real personality”

“ Why are you asking” he said and glance at me

“ Nothing just wanna know”

“ This is my real personality” he said

“ You're cold, did my father hurt your family”

“ No I'm feeling his pains” he replied

“ How old are you??”

“ You're older than me, I'm 18” he replied and I widened my eyes

“ And you act like someone that's 25”

“ That's what they call maturity kiddo” he said and I chuckled, he smiled and I laughed

“ I'm not a kid, I'm 23”

“ And he's 27” he said and I take my lip in

“ You mean Vinci”

“ Sh**t you barely know him” he said and I smiled

“ He's not letting me in”

“ Gain his trust and he's gonna let you in” he said

“ How...?”

“ Don't know, figure it out” he replied sharply as he take the egg that's in front of me and fry it after adding seasoning

“ Help me out cause you guys seem pretty close”

“ Mmm just be yourself, I know you have that sweet in you so show it to him” he said and I chuckled

“ First time you are ever say something sweet”

“ I still don't like you” he said and I scoff

“ Em' I know you are joking”

“ No I'm serious, that's why I'm cold towards you but now I think you are cool” he said and I smiled

“ I hope this continues”

“ What's gonna continue?” I heard Vinci voice and I glance at the door, I saw him carrying Haeun

“ Baby...”

“ Sween” Haeun said as she giggle clapping her hands, I carry her and kiss her cheek

She giggled as she touch my face and I smiled, “ She likes you” Sullivan said and I glance at him

“ I don't like her but I love her”

“ Haeun I think you have a new Mom now” Vinci said and I could feel my cheek burning

“ Who's the Mom??” Sullivan asked

“ Don't act clueless you and I know it's Swan” Vinci said and I hug Haeun tightly using her body to cover my face, my cheek is super red

“ Swan what are you gonna say” Vinci said and I could feel his eyes on me

“ Speechless...” I said and hurried out of the kitchen with Haeun

Is he serious about what he said??

First he confess his love in the laundry room and now he's indirectly proposing, asking me to his daughter new Mom

“ Haeun...” I called and she glance at me

“ Say the word Mom” I said and she look away without saying anything

“ You're shy” I muttered

“ Meem” she said and I glance at her

She giggled and I smiled “ Smart like your father” I said and she smiled

I went upstairs heading straight to his room, I enter his room and gently drop her on the bed

“ You're beautiful and I think you look like your Mom” I muttered and she giggled

“ Your Dad is asking me to be your new Mom and I'm kinda happy when I heard that statement” I said smiling and she giggled even tho she doesn't know what I'm saying

My smiled seize when I felt a hand wrapped round my waist

“ Vinci...”

“ I love you” I heard his husky voice as he kiss my neck

“ Haeun is here”

He held my waist firmly as he kiss my neck and I moaned softly

“ Should we go out” he said and I glance at him widening my eyes

“ You mean I'm gonna step out” I said and he nod

“ Name it anywhere you wanna go” he said and I twitch my lip

“ Let's go to the beach”

“ Sure get dressed” he said and move away smiling

“ But I don't have a clothe”

“ Huh!! What about this?” he said as he point as my dress

“ It belongs to Garam, are new set of clothes” I said and he made the O sound

“ Okay I will do something about it, I will order something for you” he said and walk out of the room bringing out his phone

Finally I'm gonna step my foot outside, I'm gonna see how the outside looks like after how many weeks

I enter the washroom, I stayed in the bathtub for forty minutes enjoying the warm water

Can't wait to step my foot outside

I can't wait to see the sky, I only see it through the window

After forty minutes I step out from the washroom tying a towel,
I could not find Haeun but I could see a beautiful gown with a
hat and a white canvass

A floral dress with a hat, Vinci and his amazing taste

I wear the gown and let my hair flow freely then wear the hat, I
wear the canvass then check myself out in the mirror

“ Swan you're beautiful”

MT ENTERTAINMENT

Beaver pace round the room as she bite her nails, the door
suddenly open and she divert her eyes to the door

She saw the CEO and Mia entering the room, Mia close the door as she smiled

“ Old man” Beaver said

“ Kwon Beaver where's your manners or do you want me to throw you out to the press dog” Woo bin said and Beaver rolled her eyeballs

“ Are you really gonna throw out your model when she's in a huge scandal” Beaver said

“ I'm gonna throw you out if you keep talking without manner” he said as he sit on the sofa

“ Old man you need to clear up those scandals, it's not true” she said

“ Why are you lying???” he said

“ W..Wh.....Wha..... What” she stuttered

“ Your high school classmate are stepping out, calling you names” Mia said and Beaver scoff

“ Are they are crazy, were they there when I was training hard to be a model”

“ Beaver keep your voice and answer my question” he said

“ Whatever, throw the question in”

“ Are you truly a bully??” he asked

“ Old man believe me, I'm not a bully” she said

“ Mia show her the video”

Mia open the laptop and drop it on the table, she play the video and Beaver widened her eyes as she watch the video of herself bullying weak classmate

“ Explain this”

“ Old man this is a set up, I'm not a bully” she said as she widened her eyes

“ Kwon Beaver just a hiatus break”

“ No never!! Just help me out” Beaver said

“ Help out, they are planning to sue” he said and she widened her eyes

“ Upon what??? I did not kill anybody”

“ Your victims are coming out and they are ready to sue so right now I'm busy begging them not to sue you” Woo bin said

“ Just give them some cash” Beaver said

“ Your money right??” Mia said and Beaver glance at her

“ Don't dare touch my money” Beaver said

“ Beaver just take a hiatus break and stay low, I will try my best to help you out” Woo bin said

“ Thank you Old man”

“ I'm not Old man, can't you see I'm still slaying in jeans” Woo bin said as he stood and show off his new jeans with canvass

“ Are you using my money to buy this rag” Beaver said and Woo bin scoff

“ Save your s\$\$s from the scandal”

“ I retract my statement, the dress is good so please save me” Beaver said and Woo bin nod

“ Mia will get you an apartment so please try your best to stay low and don't bully anyone” he said

“ Old man, If only they stay on their lane” Beaver said as she adjust her face and black sunglass

She walk out of his office smiling, she's wearing a black baggy jumpsuit with a black turtle neck as the inner top

She could see press gathered outside the entertainment

Advertisement

she walk out of the entertainment without the press glancing at her

“ What a narrow escape” she muttered as she walk to the parking lot

She bump into an idol “ Hey watch it” Beaver said as she raise my head to see four boys staring at her

“ Oh the bully girl” a guy said

“ Mike watch it” Quan said

“ Quan let him be” Felix said

“ Felix let him talk” Mike said

“ Reign say something” Felix said as they glance at him

They caught him staring at Beaver, their eyes locked, the boys glance at each other then glance at Reign who's still staring Beaver

“ Can you guys stop staring at each other” Mike said and Beaver look away

“ Who are you guys??”

“ We're the GLAMOUR, your senior” Quan said

“ Huh!!”

“ Goggle it out” Felix said as they walk away, Reign glance at her one more time before walking away

Beaver enter her car and bring out her phone, she googled the name out

GLAMOUR A BOY GROUP UNDER MT ENTERTAINMENT WHICH
CONSIST OF FOUR BOYS; Reign, Quan, Mike and Felix

“ When did they come into existence and I don't know about it”

She drop her phone, ignite the car engine then drive out

Vinci pov

“ Are you really taking her out” Sullivan said and I nod

“ You can't talk me out of this”

“ I know I can't talk you out of this cause you are stubborn”
Sullivan said and I chuckled, he walk away and I rub my palms
together feeling nervous

My eyes move to the stairs and I saw Swan, she look beautiful
and radiant

She reach my side and I smiled “ The dress is good but what about the upper side that's revealing” she said and my eyes move to her Boobs that's revealing

“ Hey use this” I said as I take off my black jacket and put it on her body, she wear the jacket and face me

“ So where are we going to??” she asked

“ The beach”

“ No not anymore” she said

“ Where do you wanna go??”

“ The mall, I need some clothes” she replied

“ Anything you want”

She held my arm as we walk out of the house smiling when we got outside, she lift her hands smiling

“ Finally I can see the daylight” she said and I chuckled

She glance at me then run to my side, she kiss my lip deeply and I reciprocate, she kiss it lightly

“ Thank you” she said

“ You deserve more good things than death” I said as I press button on the key and car made a sound “ Let's go”

We enter the car and I drive out of the compound, her eyes are glued to the window and something cross my mind immediately

“ Swan your face”

“ Oh sorry” she said as she face me using her right hand to cover the side of her face

She glance around and her hand touch a black sunglass, she take the sunglass and put it on

“ I look beautiful” she said

“ You're better than those tiny models”

“ Your celebrity girlfriend sorry friend” she said as she look away, I could see her frowning her face

Girlfriend sorry friend,,,,,why is she frowning her face??

“ Swan is everything alright??”

“ Yeah fine” she replied looking away

“ Swan you know you can talk to me” I said as I glance at her then face the road, she fiddle with her fingers as her lip moves

“ Vinci what am I to you?? Do you still see me as your enemy's daughter” she said as she face me

“ Swan....”

“ Sorry for spitting that trash out” she said and look away

“ Swan...”

“ Forget what I said and let's go to Lexington KY Mall” she said
and I increase the speed

Why is she acting cold now

“ Swan are you okay??”

“ Yeah Vinci I'm fine” she replied

“ You said something, what am I to you...”

“ You're my other part, my woman and I don't see you as my
enemy's daughter”

“ What do you see me as??” she said.

“ I see as a hardworking lady with a bright future, Hwang Vinci
woman”

She smiled, I held her her my right hand while my left hand is
on the wheel, I intertwine my hand into her hand and kiss her
hand

“ I love you”

“ I love you too” she said smiling

“ So we're cool, the relationship is gonna kick off now”

“ Not bad to be your girlfriend” Swan said as she lick her lower lip smiling

I park the car and get down from the car, I went to open the car door for her and she step out

She held my hand as we enter the Mall, we went to the VVIP section and saw no one there

“ Pick whatever you want, all bills on me”

“ Are you serious” she said as she glance around smiling

“ Take anything you want”

She rush and take a red gown then rest it on her body

“ Vinci is the gown beautiful” she asked as she smiled

“ No it's ugly, too long”

“ No it's okay, this is what they call dinner gown remember I'm a fashion designer” she said and I chuckled

She picked the red gown and a green gown, she's having fun in our own small world

“ Sir you need to evacuate this place with your wife” a lady said and I glance at her

“ Why will I do that”

“ The Governor daughter is coming and she wants everyone to evacuate this place, she doesn't share room with people” she said

“ You can leave, I know who you are talking about??”

“ Sir she's gonna sack me” she said shivering

“ Nothing is gonna happen to you” I said and she walk away

No sooner Juran enter the store and she froze when she saw Swan, did she recognize her???

“ What's this commoner doing here!” she snapped and Swan glance at her

“ Why are you yelling without control”

“ W...wh.... what, who's this pauper” she yelled

“ I hate noise, baby let's leave here” Swan said as she walk over to my side

“ Wait your voice sound familiar” Juran said and I glance at her

Swan walk past her and Juran drag her back, I fold my arm and watch as the drama is about to unfold

“ Hey bitçh I'm saying something and you wanna walk away” Juran said and Swan scoff

“ Get your flirty hands off my expensive gown” Swan said

“ You mean this old rag, this dirty clothe” Juran said and Swan remove her hand away then twist her wrist

Juran wince in pain and Swan twist the wrist harder

“ Karina did not train you well, I made a mistake trusting you and know something, your punishment is not in my hand” Swan said and Juran scoff

She push Swan away and she almost lost her balance

“ What are the f**k are you saying” Juran cursed and Swan scoff

“ You gat some thread on your dress” Swan said as she rip off Juran's silk gown leaving her half naked

“ Perfect style for you” Swan said and she was about to walk away when Juran pull her hair hard

“ You bitçh!!” she yelled and Swan push her off

Swan hit Juran chest till her back hit the wall, Juran widened her eyes

“ You need to learn some manners and I won't be the one to teach that” Swan said

“ You sound similar, you sound like that illegitimate child Swan” Juran said and Swan chuckled

“ Stupidity is real cause it's affecting you and I pray there should not be a cure for it”

“ Are you Swan??”

“ This is now the new version not the old one” Swan said and walk away shaking her hips

“ I love this drama” I said and Juran screamed

“ Should I send you to the psychiatric hospital, don't worry I will take care of the bills”

20

Swan pov

I went downstairs and something cross my mind, the clothe,,,,I can't believe I left it there when I saw Juran

My eyes move to the stairs and I saw Vinci coming downstairs holding some clothes

“ You forgot this” he said and I nod

He went to the cashier woman and pay for the dress, the lady arrange the clothe inside a thick bag

I could see them talking and I can't seem to comprehend what they're saying, the lady smiled and I could see Vinci smirking,,,,, I could feel that tiny jealousy building up that I have to walk out of the Mall

Can you imagine he's laughing with a girl

The girl is not hot than me

I frown my face as I stare at the transparent thick glass that serve as a wall in the Mall, I could see Vinci heading to the door
He open the door and step out smiling, I could see him holding an extra bag

“ Sorry for keeping you waiting” he said and I rolled my eyeballs

“ Whatever, let's just get out”

He unlock the door and I sit at the back seat, he drop the bags inside the boot and close

“ Why are you staying at the back??” he asked and I scoff

So now he's acting as if everything is fine

“ Well cause I feel like”

He nod as he enter the car and drive away, he glance at me and I still wear that stern face

“ Where do you wanna go??” he asked

“ The beach”

“ A private one??”

“ No public” I replied as I take off the sunglass and throw it on the chair, I twitch my lip as I stare at his back view and I could see him glancing at me through the window

“ Don't cause any accident”

“ Why are you wearing a stern face” he said

“ Nothing cause I feel like”

“ Did I make you angry??” he asked

No you made me jealous, laughing with a lady freely while I was just there standing

“ No I'm fine”

“ You tried, you really put Juran in her place so should I help you to teach her an unforgettable lesson??” he said and I raise my eyebrow

“ What do you wanna do??”

“ Trust your boyfriend” he replied and I chuckled

“ Don't bribe me, I'm still angry at you” I blurted out

“ You say what?” he said

“ Nevermind, that was a mistake”

“ What did I do?? Why are you mad at me??” he asked rushing his words

“ Never gonna tell you, figure it out” I replied and look away

I flip my hair backward and sigh heavily, everywhere is beautiful and weather is good

Shortly we arrive at the beach and I could see people around, hot lady and men

“ Are we really gonna stay here, the guys here are hot” Vinci said and I chuckled

“ This is what I want” I said as I wear the sunglasses and get down from the car, Vinci get down from the car and held my waist firmly

“ I'm not gonna run away so let me have fun”

“ Should we stay overnight” he said and glance at me

“ Where we are gonna sleep?”

“ There's an hotel over there” he replied and I nod

“ I'm not gonna stay overnight”

Vinci bought a gate pass and we enter the beach, I could see those men glancing at me and those tiny ladies drooling over Vinci

I can't blame them cause he's handsome and hot

“ So what should we do now that we're here” Vinci said

“ Let's get an ice cream first”

Vinci dip his hand inside his pocket and bring out his credit card

“ 3245 is the pin” he said and I nod

I walk away heading to the ice cream stall, I got there and I met a man there

“ Two vanilla” I said and he nod

He open a deep freezer, the cover is made with transparent plastic, he bring out two vanilla and close the freezer

“ With spoon too”

“ Do you want the small or big one?” he asked

“ The big one”

He bring the spoon I do use to eat at home, he package everything inside a white nylon and I was about to give him the credit card when I heard a guy voice

“ Bills on me” I heard an unfamiliar voice and I tilt my head to see a hottie staring at me, he's hot but Vinci is the hottest

He's talk, his curly hair and pink lip, he's wearing a silk short and short, the four buttons on the shirt is open and I could see his broad chest

“ Are you done accessing me” he said and I scoff

“ Don't feel important cause I'm comparing you to someone else”

“ Who is hotter than me” he said and I force a smile on my face
He's full of himself, I bet he's gonna be a player, sorry he's a player

“ What's your name?”

“ Kim..” I replied

“ Kimberlyn” he said and I nod

“ You can call me that too”

“ Can I have your line??” he asked

“ I don't have a phone”

“ What about I get you one” he said and I chuckled, I glance at Vinci I can see him boiling in jealousy

So now he knows how it feels, he knows how I was feeling

“ Thanks for your concern but I don't need it”

“ I'm Jordan and I will like to know you better” he said as he gently hold my hand and kiss the back of my palm

I smiled and I could see Vinci boiling hard, he is about to take a step when a beautiful lady approach him

“ Are you gonna take care of the bills??”

“ Sure Angel” he said and I smiled

“ Take care of it” I said as I take the nylon and hurried out of there

“ Damn I must have those body, that f**king soft a\$\$s that's bouncing under that silk, I must screw it and make her scream my name” I could hear his voice and I rolled my eyeballs

“ We shall never meet” I muttered, I was about to reach Vinci side when the lady kissing his cheek

That girl!

“ Baby...” I called as I reach his side and the lady glance at me

“ Excuse me who are you” the lady said

“ I'm his legit girlfriend”

“ Hottie who's this witch” she said as she glance at Vinci then glance at me

“ Just leave and never return” Vinci said coldly and the lady walk away but not without glaring at me

“ Welcome back” he said icily and he's about to walk away when I heard his hand

“ What's the meaning of that, the girl and her kissing your cheek”

“ Swan you started it first, why will you let that animal to kiss your hand and stare at you lustfully” he said as he face me and I remove my hand away from his hand

“ You started it first, the cashier lady”

“ She was just appreciating your braveness, the way you dealt with Juran and she gave you a gift for purchasing the red dress, there's a gift attached to the red dress” he said

“ Oh you never mention that”

“ You never asked” he said

“ Even tho I did not ask, you are suppose to tell me”

“ Wait is that why you were wearing a stern face” he said and I nod

He laughed “ Come on Swan trust me” he said amidst his laugh

“ You're handsome and they're drooling over you”

“ But I'm yours alone” he said as he pull me closer and I smiled

He kiss my hair and stroke it gently “ The suture is still there” he said

“ I will Garam to remove it tomorrow”

“ Should we go to the hotel” he said and I glance at him

“ What are you trying to do?”

“ Haeun need a baby brother” he replied smiling and I chuckled

I hit his chest and he peck my lip “ Let's go...”

He held my hand as we walk away and I could see those tiny ladies glaring at me, I shot them a deadly glare, assuming there's a gun with me trust me by now they would be in a pool of blood

We enter the hotel and stop in front of the receptionist

“ I wanna book room for a night, how much?” Vinci said

A night, don't tell me we're gonna sleep in this beautiful hotel, the outside is appealing and I'm sure the inside will be appealing too

“ We have the low bedroom, Royal bedroom and executive bedroom” the lady replied

“ For a night, how much is the executive bedroom??” Vinci asked

“ 1 Million won” she replied and he nod

“ Hey it's expensive, just go for the low” I whispered

“ I want you to be comfortable, I will go for the executive bedroom” Vinci said and the lady glance at me, I held Vinci arm and her expression change

“ You're gonna do a transfer, input your pin” she said as she gave Vinci a machine that look like a phone

Vinci input the pin and soon he phone made a sound, he bring out and I peep to see a notification, a debit alert

“ The key and direction” Vinci said

“ The room is on the fourth floor, this is your key” the lady said as she bring out a key and was about to give it to Vinci when I snatch it from her

“ Thanks for your time” I said smiling as I walk away with Vinci

“ Do you see that”

“ See what?” he asked innocently

“ Nevermind”

“ The looks and everything

I know she's drooling” he said

“ I hate your handsome face”

“ Get use to it baby cause it's meant for you alone” he said and I smiled

We climb the stairs and soon we arrive in from room 325

I unlock the door with key and enter the room with Vinci, I lock the door back with the key

“ Vinci the money was too much”

“ Don't he spoil you with riches” he said and I raise my eyebrow

“ Who are you talking about??”

“ Aldo and your father” he replied

“ Aldo hardly have my time cause I was starving him of s£x and my father, he do give me money weekly but the money is kinda useless so I spend it on the orphanage home, my business and spend it on Yiga”

“ You're not the materialistic type” he said

“ I don't get swayed by material thing”

Vinci take care off his silk shirt and I take off my canvass, my hat and sunglass, I throw it on the sofa

Okay the room is wide with a king sized bed, a red duvet with a red bedsheet

There's a small fridge, sofa, glass table and mirror,,,it look more like my room in my father's Mansion

I check the washroom and it's beautiful, Vinci lay on the bed staring at me as I check the room

“ The money worth it???” he said

“ Yeah it worth but next time spend it on business”

“ Yes Ma'am” he said smiling

I went to sit on the bed in front of him and point at the zip

“ Please help me to unzip it”

He slowly unzip the dress then kiss my back, he trail kisses on it and I smiled, he unbuckle my bra and pull it down

Vinci made me tilt my head and he kiss my lip deeply, I dip my hand inside his hair as the kiss get intense

He broke the kiss and lay on the bed smiling, I pull it off my body left alone with panties

I crawl to his side and mount on his body, I kiss his lip and he slap my butt

He squeeze it lightly and I moan in his mouth, he pull off the panties and I grind him

“ Damn Swan” he said and I chuckled

“ Let me be in charge today” I said seductively as I bite my lip

“ Mmm someone is getting spoilt” he said grinning from ear to ear

“ You're the one”

I gently pull off his short with his boxer and fling aside, he raise the red duvet and use it to cover my waist

His phallus sprang up immediately and I widened my eyes,
damn he's huge, thick and long

“ Are you scared??” he said and I nod

“ You're huge”

“ You could barely take everything in the last time but today
you are gonna take everything in” he said and I chuckled

I gently touch his phallus and shiver, I stroke it gently and he
moaned softly, I twirl my finger round the cap and he moaned

My hand stroke it gently and soon I replace it with my mouth, I
suck it slowly and later I increase my pace

He held my hair moaning as I suck his harder, my tongue twirl
on his cap

“ Damn it Swan!!”

“ Sh**t you got me”

“ That was wild”

“ F**k I'm cummin” he said and I increase my pace, he release everything inside my mouth and I swallow everything in cleaning mouth with my palm

“ Who taught you that??” he asked as he breathe out

“ I do hear girls talking about it”

“ You did it well” he said and I smiled

He kiss my lip deeply and I reciprocate, he made me turn around shooting my soft a\$s out

He slap the cheek of the butt and I chuckled, he slowly thrust in and I moaned softly, I could feel his going deeper until I take everything in

“ Still tight” he muttered

He thrust in slowly then later he increase his pace, he thrust in faster, faster, faster, harder, harder, harder and deeper, deeper, deeper

I moaned on the pillow as my Boobs clap each, he fondle the Boobs and use his finger to tease my clit

My moans become loud and he moaned, we both moaned in ecstasy as we eat each other raw

He screw my a\$ for long and I haven't seen him go long like this

We change to three different styles before he release his semen hotly inside my body

He kiss my lip deeply then kiss my Boobs, “ I love you”

“ I love you too” I muttered

He kiss my Boobs then suck it like a baby as he rest his head on my chest, I dip my hand inside his hair moaning softly

He grind his teeth on it and I screamed in pleasure “ Vinci leave it for Haeun little brother”

“ No let me enjoy it before he arrive” he said and I chuckled, he suck the other Boobs and his hand massage my va**na

“ Vinci you're wild”

“ I already told you that” he said and I chuckled

His hand move to my waist massaging my flat tummy

“ Vinci you're 27” I said and he nod

“ Who told you that??” he asked

“ Sullivan...”

“ That boy” he said and I laughed

“ Tell me more, let's bound together”

“ Kim Swan ask me any question” he said as rest his head on the pillow and I rest my head on his chest

The duvet cover our body as his hand rest on my naked waist, he stroke my hip side

“ What's your dream??”

“ Mmm I wish to be a boss on my own and be the best Daddy for my kids and stay strong for you” he replied

“ If you're to open a company, which company will you open??”

“ A tech companies” he replied and I nod

“ That's all” I said as I twitch my lip

“ I get jealous easily so don't let any guy to kiss your hand or else there will be a punishment waiting for you” he said

“ What's the punishment?”

“ A kiss...” he replied

“ You are naughty then that means I will ask all the boys to kiss my hand”

“ Don't try it I'm serious” he said and I nod smiling

“ Avoid those tiny ladies”

“ You're better than them” he said

“ So what do you plan on doing to Juran?”

“ I'm gonna make her beg for death” he replied

“ How are you gonna do that?” I asked

“ By leaking out her deepest secret or something she barely know” he replied

“ I don't know her deepest secret”

“ Do you know she's illegitimate” he said and I widened

“ What!!!!”

“ Sullivan did a deep research on her, that was before I kidnapped you” he said

“ So you mean Juran and Ethel are illegitimate”

“ You guys blood are different and if I release the result, trust me she's gonna kiss her career goodbye” he said

“ Vinci don't do that”

“ This girl hired me to kill you, she hate you, she even have the gut to call you an illegitimate child” he half yelled and I kiss his lip

“ Vinci I know that but...”

“ Don't be too kind cause they're riding because of your kindness” he said and I nod

“ Just let her be, nemesis is gonna catch up with her”

He nod and I kiss his lip deeply, he reciprocate and I break the kiss, I get off from his body and enter the washroom

I bath and soon I was done bathing, I wear a white robe and tie a towel on my head cause my hair is wet, I step out of the bathroom and met Vinci watching a video on his phone

“ Vinci you stink so go and bath”

“ Babe you need to see this” Vinci said and I rush to his side
then peep into his phone

I saw an article, I widened my eyes when I saw my name

***** BREAKING NEWS *****

**WE'RE GIVEN A TIP FROM AN ANONYMOUS PERSON ABOUT
KIM SWAN, THE GOVERNOR'S DAUGHTER THAT'S UNDER
SHADOW'S CAPTIVE**

****** KIM SWAN, THE 23 YEARS OLD FASHION DESIGNER HAVE
BEEN CONFIRMED AS AN ILLEGITIMATE CHILD OF THE
GOVERNOR, THAT'S WHY THE GOVERNOR IS NOT TAKING THE
KIDNAPPING ISSUE SERIOUS**

**WE HAVEN'T HEARD ANYTHING ABOUT HER, THERE'S ALSO
ANOTHER TIP ABOUT HER**

**KIM SWAN IS UNDER A SECRET TREATMENT, SHE DID LASIK
EYES TREATMENT AND MENTAL HEALTH TREATMENT**

“ NO WONDER SHE HASN'T BEEN IN KOREA FOR YEARS, SHE JUST RETURN FEW MONTHS AGO AND START UP HER FASHION BUSINESS”

“ WHAT'S THE NETIZEN GONNA SAY ABOUT THIS”

I read the news and widened my eyes in bewilderment

“ Swan...” Vinci called and I move away from him

“ Lasik eyes treatment is true but the mental treatment is false, I was in the overseas studying as soon as I was done with the Lasik eyes treatment”

“ Then who upload this bullsh**t” he said as his face lit up

He make a phone call “ Sullivan check the news and find out who upload that trash” he said

“ I'm waiting” Vinci said as he put the phone on speaker

“ A minute, I'm working on it” Sullivan said

Few minutes later I heard his voice “ Vinci I tracked the source and what I'm seeing is a little bit shocking...” Sullivan trailed

“ Just say it...”

“ Juran's brother Ethel, the account I'm seeing is linking to him so I hacked his phone and he's truly the anonymous person using an anonymous account” he drop the bomb and I fell on the floor

“ Swan...” Vinci called as he rush to my side

“ Why me???”

I face him as my eyes become misty, he hug me tightly and I sob on his bare chest

21

I rest my head on the pillow and watch as he tuck me into the bed

“ You need to rest and don't think about anything” Vinci said and I nod

“ Before sleeping I want ice cream”

Vinci stood and walk over to the table side, he take the nylon and bring an ice cream with a spoon

He walk over to my side and drop it on the bed, I gently sit upright and start devouring the ice cream

He watch me in delight and I smiled, after taking the ice cream, Vinci drop the ice cream bowl on the table and clean my lip with his thumb

I pull him closer and kiss his lip, he widened his eyes in surprise

“ Thank you for your support and love”

“ Swan...” he called and I slowly let go of him

“ I'm happy it's not longer a one sided love, I'm happy to be with you” I said as I gently shift and he lay next to me

My hand rest on his cheek as I caress it smiling, he smiled at me

“ The news...” he trailed

“ Forget about it, let's talk about us”

“ Should I teach them a lesson” he said and I nod

“ Just let them be”

His hand find it way to my lap and shift the robe aside as his hand caress my naked my lap

I open my lap a little bit giving him a full access to it, his hand touch my Va**na and I pull his neck closer then kiss his lip

A wet kiss and his hand massage my va**na “ Mm Vinci” I moaned softly

“ Swan allow me to teach them an unforgettable lesson, this people are dangerous and they're desperate to ruin you” he said softly

“ I don't want you to get hurt, I don't them to die”

“ Nothing is gonna happen to me and they're not gonna die, they are just gonna beg for death” he said softly and I nod, he remove his hand away from my va**na

I fold my lower lip and just then I felt a sharp pain below my abdomen

“ Ouch it hurt” I wince as I move away from him and roll on the bed

“ Swan are you okay??” Vinci asked as he try to touch me but I stopped him

“ What's today's date??”

“ 15th of July” he replied and I made the O sound

Immediately I felt something thick coming out from my va**na together with pains

“ Swan are you okay??” Vinci asked

“ My period is back, I totally forgot” I replied and was about to hop off when Vinci held my hand

“ Don't be embarrassed about it, it's a normal thing” he said and I nod

He hop off the bed and carry me in a bridal style, my hands are wrapped firmly round his neck as I stare at him

“ Why is the period back?? I thought you were pregnant” he said and I chuckled

“ You want a baby??”

“ I want it and Haeun need a little brother” he replied

“ Why don't you work towards it”

“ Definitely gonna do that as soon as you're done with your period, I will order a sanitary pad for you” Vinci said as we enter the washroom and he gently drop me in the bathtub

He grab my lip and squeeze my Boobs, I moaned in his mouth

“ I'm gonna deal with them, those treacherous people so don't talk me out of it, all I want is your support” he said and walk out

Treacherous people, I know who he's talking about??

Swan just allow him to deal with them, this people want you dead and I'm highly disappointed in Ethel

I'm not expecting this bullshit from him, I thought he's different from his Mom and sister, I guess wickedness run through their veins

Spending close to five minutes in the bathroom thinking, I get off from the bathtub and bath, I clean myself up and wash off the stain that's on the white robe

I step out of the washroom naked without tying any towel round my body, I don't wanna stain the towel

“ Swan....” I heard the voice and jolt out of my thought

“ Are you saying something”

“ You're naked” Vinci said as he cough and look away

“ Don't be shy,,,, I don't the towel to get stained”

“ Oh,,,,I get, your undies is on the bed” he said still looking away and I smiled

“ Pass it to me”

“ Swan....” he called

“ My leg hurt, please”

I watch as he take the undies and come over to my side, he drop the undies on my palm and look away, I pack the sanitary pad on the panties then wear it

“ Hey look at me” I said as I held his cheek firmly and make him stare at me

“ Get dressed” he said and I peck his lip

“ You have my permission, deal with them, make them beg for death and make them confess their sins”

He smiled, his dimples become visible as his small lip create a beautiful smile

“ Swan...” he called

“ Do you want anything”

He held my hand and drag me to the bed, he went to the washroom and come back with a white robe

I wear the white robe and watch as he pack my hair aside

“ Evidence,,,,, do you know that you are the only one that make them pay for their sins” he said and I hold his arm

“ What are you saying??”

“ I will hand over the evidences to you so it's left for you to decide on what you wanna use it to do, is it to fight for justice or to save your father” he said

“ Vinci you are scaring me, why are you sounding like this”

He stood and walk away, he walk over to the curtain and open it wide

I could see a big thick window

“ Swan....” he called and I hastily stood and rush to his side

“ Are you okay???” I asked with concern as I hold his hand

“ Swan I have limited time on earth” he drop the bomb and I could feel my heart sinking

“ What are you saying?? Are you sick??”

“ Swan I have thyroid cancer, the lump and difficulty in swallowing food are the symptoms” he said and I slowly let go of his hand then move my hand to his cheek

“ You're gonna be fine okay”

“ This cancer killed some people and mine is almost at the last stage” he said

“ Is there no cure for it”

“ She treated it but now it's back, it's now worse than before” he said

“ She????”

“ Garam and her colleague helped me” he said and I don't know when tears start rolling down

“ You're gonna be fine, you're not gonna die trust me”

“ That's my greatest, I wanna leave you alone in pains, I wanna be the best daddy for Haeun” Vinci said as his eyes become misty

“ Don't make me cry, you're be fine, have faith”

“ Swan don't think it's best we stay apart, I will let you go,,,I just don't want you to get more attach to me so you won't feel any pain when I leave” he said as he held my cheek and kiss my lip deeply, more passionately

“ Vinci I'm not leaving and you're not gonna die”

“ Swan please just leave,,,I'm gonna release you and end those treacherous people” he said

“ Vinci this is my decision, I'm not leaving and you're not gonna die”

I hug him and he sob lowly on my shoulder, I soothe his back as I sob quietly

He's not gonna die, I'm gonna look for a cure, I can't bare to lose him

Right now he's my only family

He's gonna be the father of my unborn children, he's gonna be my man and I'm gonna show him off to the whole world

I won't let him die like that, I disengage from the hug then kiss his lip

“ Vinci let's make love”

“ Swan....”

“ Let's make love maybe that is gonna make you stop thinking about death, I'm not going here, we ride or die”

“ Swan...” he called and I jump on him, I wrap my legs round his waist hugging him and his hands rest on my hip

“ We're here to have fun so please don't spoil it, I don't wanna cry again”

“ You're not gonna cry again, we gonna ride or die” he said and kiss my neck

“ Are you still gonna be an assassin?”

“ I'm gonna quit as soon as I'm done with KIM DAVID and his friends” he said and I face him

“ Should we go home?”

” No yet, let's make love” he said and I smiled brightly

“ We can't, I forgot I'm on my period” I said and he frown his face

“ That's bad” he muttered

“ We can do it immediately I'm done with my period”

“ What if you get pregnant” he said and I twitch my lip

“ I will terminate it”

“ You wanna kill a human, don't try it” he said and I chuckled

“ I was just joking, why will I kill my child, why will I kill our child”

“ Swan let's go back, Haeun needs us” he said and I nod

He gently put me down and I walk over to the sofa to take my gown

I wear my gown and sunglass with the hat, Vinci get dressed and we walk out of the room holding hands

“ I know we plan to spend the night here but I have to do something at home” he said

“ What's the thing??”

“ I want to return those bad boys to the governor and also teach Juran a little lesson” he replied and I glance at him

“ Should I follow you??”

“ I don't want them to see you, not now” he replied

“ But I want to see Juran face to face”

“ Swan...” he said

“ It's fine if you don't want me to follow you”

“ Sullivan have found Juran's biological father so you can follow me to convince him to tell the world that he's Juran biological father” he said and I nod

“ Are we going there now?”

“ We're going home first” Vinci replied as he drop the key in front of the receptionist table and walk away without saying anything

“ Thank you for your service”

HUA HIN RESTAURANT....

In a big table, three men surround the table drinking soju as they talk

“ Kim have you seen the news?” senator Jung said and the governor smiled

“ Have seen it, is that your handiwork” Governor said

“ Hurting you is a waste of time” senator Jung replied

“ David is that true?” Assemblyman Lee asked

“ She went there for only Lasik surgery and she also went there to study” David replied

“ How's the election?” senator Jung asked

“ It's okay but I want my daughter back” Governor said

“ That's true, Scott is here to be back and the two weeks is almost up” senator Jung said

“ Don't you think he's dead” Assemblyman Lee said

“ Do you want him dead” Governor said

“ Of course, as soon as he's back with Swan and Shadow's dead body ” Assemblyman Lee said

“ But the guy is useful” senator Jung said

“ Useful but his demands are high so I need to eliminate him” Assemblyman Lee said

“ Let's wait for him to be back” Governor said

“ He's taking long”

The door open and they all glance at the door to see Choi Jin

He enter the room and bow at them “ You're here”

“ Is Scott back?” Jin asked

“ Stupid question” Assemblyman Lee said

“ I'm sorry sir”

“ He's yet to be back so I want you to do more findings on it”

“ About what??”

“ About Scott to be sure he's fine, to be sure he did not run away with my daughter” Governor said

“ He can't do that” senator Jung said

“ Sly fox”

Swan pov

Sullivan park the car and we wait for the man, Vinci held my hand and I smiled

“ Do you know how he look like?” Vinci asked

“ He's a middle aged man, a struggling mam” Sullivan replied

“ A struggling man?”

“ Karina left him cause he's a commoner, she push her pregnancy on the governor, even after giving birth to Ethel she still meet the man but later after giving birth to Juran she left him for good” Sullivan said

“ What a gold digger” Vinci said

“ Do we really have to meet the man, can't you upload it like that”

“ We need an undeniable evidence that's gonna pull them down” Vinci said and I nod

“ Yeah that's true but hope you know that if the man start claiming his child, he might die” I said and they glance at me

“ What do you mean??”

“ My Dad doesn't like a stain on his reputation and Karina will do anything to take over his property” I said

“ She's gonna eliminate him or set him up” Sullivan said

“ You guys have to protect him if you wanna use him” I said

“ You smart” Sullivan said and I chuckled

“ I have to be smart cause those people are vipers” I said

“ Vi what” Sullivan said

“ Vipers...”

“ Sorry what's vipers?” Sullivan asked and I glance at Vinci

“ You don't understand English” I said and he glared at me

“ I understand English” he said immediately

“ She's trying to say they're dangerous” Vinci said and he made the O sound

“ Let's work our finger to the bone” I said and Sullivan glance at me immediately

“ You say what??” Sullivan said

“ Sullivan what's the meaning?” Vinci asked

“ Let's hurt our finger” Sullivan replied and I chuckled

“ It means let's work hard” I said

“ I'm right” he said and I laughed

“ He's good at hacking but he's bad at idioms” Vinci said and I nod

“ The man is here” Sullivan said and Vinci get down from the car

I could see him talking to the man and a minute later the man enter the back seat and Vinci enter the front seat

“ Are you not Swan” the man said and I glance at him

“ I'm Kim Swan nice to meet you Mr Julius”

“ Pleasure is mine, why do you want to see me” the man said

“ I want you to tell the whole world that you are Juran's father”
Vinci said

“ Are you okay?? I'm not her father” the man said

“ Don't deny it” Sullivan said as he pass an ipad to me

I collect the iPad then check the content that's there, I saw a
DNA test result

How did he get the result??? Sullivan is really crazy

I show the man the result and watch as he widened his eyes in surprise

“ So why don't you cooperate with him” I said

“ Are working with him??? I thought you are under captive”
Julius said

“ Not anymore so are you ready to cooperate”

“ I can't do it” the man said

“ You can't do it...” Vinci said

“ I'm getting off” the man said as he touch the door handle, he was about to push it when I muttered something

“ Leave and you're gonna lose your precious daughter and son”
I said and he glance at me

“ What!!!”

“ Your children hurt me, they sent an assassin to kill me but thank goodness I'm alive” I said

“ What are you trying to say??”

“ Karina is influencing them badly and what if I decide to do my revenge by killing them in a cold blood” I said

“ Are you threatening me”

“ We all know they're precious to you” Sullivan said

“ Make a choice, tell the world their history or I will kill them in a cold blood”

“ Kim Swan” Julius half yelled! And I smirk

“ Time is ticking cause right now I'm hungry for blood” I said and face me

I could see him shivering in fear “ Make a wise choice” I smirk

Juran your doom is coming, I will get back at everyone most especially Karina

22

I could see him shivering in fear “ Make a wise choice” I smirk

“ Swan....” Vinci called and I look away

“ Julius time is ticking fast” Vinci said and I glance at Julius

“ I'm not gonna do it” Julius said and get down from the car, I watch as he walk away

“ Swan....” Vinci called

“ He did not agree to it so let's go back home”

Sullivan glance at me then glance at Vinci, he ignite the car engine and start driving

“ Vinci before I forget, Thelma said she's coming” Sullivan said and I cover my face with my palm

“ She's welcome” Vinci said and I look away, I wonder who's this Thelma girl

I close my eyes and rest my head properly, I'm not longer feeling any pains in my abdomen and the blood doesn't seem to be rushing fast

Julius, why did he not agree to it, I thought threatening him will make him agree to it but instead he disagree to it

Vinci will be disappointed in me, I ruined everything, I should have just let him take control of the situation and Thelma, who's she???

Soon we reach home and I was the first person to get down from the car and rush inside

I enter the living room and saw Garam moving around, she's wearing a black trouser with a white top

She look uneasy as she move around “ Are you okay??”

“ No I'm not” she replied sharply and I nod

“ What's wrong??” I asked

“ I'm looking for my key” she replied

“ Key,,,,,, key for what??”

“ My car key” she replied

“ You can use my car” I heard Vinci voice and I glance at him

He drop his car key on the table and walk away heading to the dark room

“ I will try and look for your car key”

“ There's a teddy attach to the key holder for easy recognition” she said and I nod

She carry her bag and adjust her hair “ Are you going to work???, It's too early” Sullivan said and she glance at him

“ You don't know time wait for no man, it's five minutes to four” Garam said and rush out of the house

“ She should have at least tell me where's Haeun before rushing out” Sullivan said

“ She's in front of you” I said and he glance down to see her lying on the floor sucking her thumb

“ My baby” Sullivan said as he bend down and carry her

I walk away to meet Vinci and I saw talking to some guys, wait those guys are still here, I thought they are gone

Swan he can handle things, I went upstairs and fall on the bed as soon as I enter the room

My mind flash back at what happened at the hotel, is he really sick?? Is he really gonna die??

He wants me to leave?? Should I go?? Swan are you ready for all this?? You love your father's enemy how are you gonna deal with that??

Everything is gonna be fine, he's not gonna die cause he's strong guy, I will look for a cure for him

I stood from the bed and walk out of the room, I climb the stairs there I heard a door bell

“ She's here...” I heard Sullivan voice and I glance around

“ Who's here???”

“ My sister” Sullivan replied as he rush to the door

I reach downstairs and saw Vinci coming out from the dark room, he lock the door and glance at me

“ You're here” I read his lip and nod

He open his arm wide and I run into his arm, I hug him tightly and he kiss my forehead smiling

“ Suture, have you tell Garam about it??” he said as he glance at me

“ No I forgot” I replied pouting my lip and he peck my lip

“ My cute doll” he said and I widened my eyes

“ I'm not a doll”

“ But you look like a doll” he replied smiled and I glared at him playfully

“ Yo Vinci” I heard an unfamiliar voice and I tilt my neck to see a lady standing in front of me, she wore a red suit pant with a red bra and Boobs is visible with a suit jacket

She open the jacket wide making her Boobs to be visible, she wore black heels to match her dressing

Okay this dress is wild

“ Thelma you're back” Vincis said smiling as they hug

He disengage from the hug and she wrap her hand round his waist

“ Thelma meet Swan” Sullivan said and I glance at him

“ I'm Kim Swan” I said as I stretch my hand forth

She looked at my hand then glance at me, I could see her scoffing secretly

“ Vinci let's get out from here” Thelma said and drag Vinci along as they walk out of the room heading to the pool

“ Swan sorry about that” Sullivan said and I nod

“ It's not a problem I understand, who's she??”

“ My sister, my elder sister” he replied and I nod

“ Thelma, Sullivan, what a perfect name”

“ You guys are age mate” he said and I raise my eyebrow

“ That's nice, how long is she gonna stay here??”

“ She's leaving tomorrow evening” he replied and I sigh

So I won't enjoy my man alone, she shunned my greeting and she even have the gut to scoff at me

Gosh I feel like pulling those hair off her head, I feel like ripping those clothes off her body, those rags she call a clothe

“ Swan are you okay??” Sullivan asked and I glance at him

“ Why are you asking?”

“ You have been gritting your teeth hard and your hand, you have been folding it hard and there's blood on it” Sullivan said and I glance at my hand

“ Oh I dug my hand with my nails pretty hard” I said and walk away

I carry Haeun from the couch and went upstairs, I could see Sullivan staring at me and I hasten my step, I enter the room and drop her on the bed then use the pillow to block her two side

She should be hungry by now

I went downstairs and I make sure I did not stain the rail and pillow with the blood that's on my hand, I went to the kitchen and wash my hands thoroughly before I prepare oat cereal for her, I add plenty milk in the oat cereal

I prepared it in a thick plate then put the plate on a tray with a bottle of warm water, cup and spoon, I carry the tray and went upstairs, I enter the room and saw Haeun walking as she holding the table for support

“ Baby be careful” I said as I drop the tray on the table and carry her

She smiled at me and I chuckled, “ You're cute” I muttered

I gently sit on the floor and she sit on my lap as I feed

She eat the food very well that she even want to take the spoon from my hand

After feeding her, I give her water to drink and she drank everything

“ You're eating well” I muttered and she giggled

I pack the plate inside the tray and carry it “ Baby stay here for a minute I'm coming back” I said as I walk out of the room and close the door,,,,I went downstairs and wash the dirty dishes

As soon as Swan enter the kitchen, Thelma enter the living room and she glance at the kitchen only to see Swan dancing as she wash dirty dishes

Thelma scoff and walk away, “ Childish human being” she muttered as climb the stairs heading to Vinci's room

She open the room door and saw no one there, Haeun crawl past her without her knowledg; she crawled down the stairs and by the time she was about to crawl down to the floor, she lost her balance and fall on the floor and her hand hit the edge of the step case, she hit her head hard on the floor and cry loud

Thelma hastily regain herself and rush downstairs, she carry Haeun and check her body thoroughly, she have injury on her hand and thank goodness there's no injury on her head

“ Swan what have you done to her, how can you be so careless”
Thelma said and Haeun increase her cry

Swan rush out of the kitchen and saw Haeun crying, she rush to her and carry Haeun away from her, Swan rub the back of her head as Haeun sob on her shoulder

“ I'm sorry baby” Swan muttered

Vinci and Sullivan rushed in and they saw Haeun crying as Swan stroke her hair

“ What happened??”

“ Swan left the door open and Haeun crawl out so I think she fell on the stairs hitting her head hard” Thelma said and Swan widened her eyes

“ Hey Vinci she's lying against me” Swan said

“ Shut up” Vinci growled

“ Are you telling me to shut up, you're not even ready to hear me out” Swan half yelled!

“ What do you wanna say, Thelma already explained everything” Vinci said coldly and Swan scoff

“ Thelma I get the fact you don't like me but I won't take this rubbish from you” Swan said and Thelma secretly scoff at her

“ Sullivan collect the baby from before she kill her” Thelma said and Swan glance at Vinci

Vinci walk away without saying anything

Advertisement

Swan drop Haeun on Thelma's body

“ Enjoy your stay in the house” Swan muttered and walk away

She went back to the kitchen and resume washing the dirty dishes

Did he just tell me to shut up

Don't tell me he believe her, well what did I expect he's definitely gonna support her

I arrange the cups and spoons in the normal position and the plate, I take it and was about to drop it in the plate rack when the plate slip from my hand and fall on the floor

The sound of the plate crashing force me to close my eyes tightly, the tears forming in my eyes roll down

“ Hey Swan what have you done again” I heard his cold voice and I opened my eyes immediately

“ It slipped off” I replied

“ She broke the plate, the most expensive plate in Korea” I heard Thelma voice and I cleaned my teary eyes and sniff hard

“ I'm sorry about that”

“ Do you think sorry can fix everything, first you carelessly left Haeun in the room with the door opened and now you broke her plate” Vinci said coldly and I scoff

“ If you wanna yell, yell at me cause I'm f**king used to it” I said

“ What!!!”

“ Do you think I will leave Haeun alone in the room without closing the door, Vinci I'm not stupid” I half yelled! and I could see Thelma smirking

“ About the plate I broke, I will pay you back” I said and walk out of the kitchen

I can't believe those statement is coming from his mouth

What did he take me as??

Does he really think I will hurt Haeun intentionally??

I remember closing the door before leaving for the kitchen so
right now I'm suspecting Thelma

The crazy bitçh that wanna ruin my relationship with Vinci

Gosh I hate him

I enter the room and close the door hard, I went to lay on the
bed and cry my eyes hard on the pillow

He's not a human being

I f**king hate him

He did not believe me then why are we dating when there's no trust

I heard the door opening and I glance at the door to see Vinci entering the room, I look away and ignored him

“ Swan...” he called and I ignored him

He touch my hair and I slap his hand hard, he still trap his hand on my hair

“ Vinci leave, let me be”

“ Swan are you mad at me” he said and I raise my head

“ Are you listening to yourself, why won't I be mad at you when you failed to believe your girlfriend, tell me what's the essence of a relationship when there's no trust there”

“ So you wanna break up with me” he said and I nod

“ Yes if that's possible”

“ Okay you can go, the door is opened” he said and I get down from the bed, I was about to walk out of the room when he pull me into a warm hug

“ Vinci go away, let me leave so you can have fun with Thelma”

He hug me tighter then kiss my forehead, I break down in a loud tears

“ I'm sorry for not believing you earlier, I wasn't thinking straight and you know how much I love Haeun” he said

“ You should know what I can do, you don't have to yell at me”

“ I'm sorry sweetie and,,,you said something” he trailed

“ You wanna leave me alone, you wanna go back home,,,, Swan trust me I'm definitely gonna kidnap you again cause you're

now drug and I'm getting addicted to you" he said and I chuckled as I hug him back

" What about Thelma?"

" There's nothing going on, trust me" he said

" I don't trust you cause you don't trust me too"

He chuckled " Babe I'm sorry about that, it won't repeat itself again" he said and I scoff

" Stay away from Thelma till she leave this house"

" You mean I should avoid her" he said and I nod

" Or you can't do it, don't tell me you are getting addicted to her too" I said and he peck my lip

" You're my only addiction, I will avoid her if that's what you want" he said and I smiled in satisfaction

“ I'm sorry for acting that way earlier” he added and I smiled

“ I'm glad you're admitting your mistake but it's fine, trust me I wasn't the door that left the door open”

“ Thelma mistakenly open the door and she crawl out without her knowledge” he said

“ Finally the truth is out” I said and he chuckled

He kiss my forehead then kiss my lip deeply and I slowly reciprocate, we kissed

passionately as our tongue fight for supremacy

I held onto his clothes and he held my waist firmly

“ Swan I wanna have you right now but I just can't, I will wait till you are done with your period” he said huskily and I smiled

“ Thanks for understanding and by the way how's your health, can you eat??”

“ The medicine Garam gave me is working so now I can still manage and eat” he said

“ Don't lie to me”

“ I can't eat all the food, the only food I can still eat is oatmeal” he said and I nod

“ Let me go and prepare it for you”

“ There's no need for that, I'm going out now” he said

“ I won't take that from you”

“ Swan I'm sorry, I promise to eat when I come back” he said and I look away frowning my face

“ You know I hate to see those angry face and you know I love you” he said and I chuckled

“ Keep to your promise” I said and he nod

“ Your clothes are in the wardrobe, you can arrange them and I will ask Garam to get you some undies” he said

“ Thank you for everything”

“ You deserve it all cause you are special” he said and I chuckled
He was about to kiss my lip when we heard a soft knock on the table

“ Vinci it's time” I heard Sullivan voice and I glance at him

“ Time for what?”

“ Time for those vipers” he replied and hastily kiss my lip then rush out of the room

Vinci pov

I smiled as I rush out of the room and saw Sullivan wearing an headset

“ The files and weapons??”

“ They are in the bag” Sullivan replied as he take off the black small bag and hung on my neck

“ Let's go, they are in Bangor restaurant” he said and walk downstairs

I glance at the door then walk away, I reach downstairs and I saw Thelma carrying Haeun

“ Vinci are you going out??” she asked and I nod

She was about to hug me when I gesture at her to stop, I don't wanna Swan wrath, she get jealous easily and I don't want her to be jealous

“ We can do this later, I'm late” I said and walk out of the house

I mount on my black power bike then ignite the engine, Sullivan mount on his power bike and ignite the engine, I wear the helmet and drag the glass down

“ Let's go..”

We drive out of the compound in full speed, we drive straight to the restaurant passing through shorter way

Soon we arrive at the restaurant and I park the bike properly then switch off the engine, I take off the helmet and hung it on the power bike

“ The number??”

“ Same room” he replied and I nod

“ How do you use to know all this thing?”

“ Don't dare an hacker” he replied and I chuckled

“ Did she tell anything?”

“ You mean Thelma??” he asked and I nod

“ Did she tell you what happened?”

“ I forced her to tell me cause I notice something was off, Vinci you were too harsh on her earlier let me be sincere with you” Sullivan said and I nod

“ You're right but I have already apologize to her”

“ Beg her harder, get something for her, try to be a romantic boyfriend and not a boring boyfriend” he said and I glance at him

“ Don't give me that look, I know you guys are dating” he said

“ You're quick-witted” I muttered as I enter the room and saw the governor with his men

“ Governor your time is almost up”

“ Vinci where's my daughter” the governor said and I chuckled.

“ You don't seems to like her and I have seen your men, Scott or whatever his name is” Sullivan said

“ Who's this high school boy” senator Jung said and I chuckled

“ The high school boy that's gonna reveal your ugly faces to the world through his amazing hacking skills”

“ You can't pin me down with those useless evidence, it's improper” the governor said and I smirk

“ Why don't you watch, Karina children are not yours” Sullivan said as he bring out a paper from his bag

He drop it in front of him and I watch as he governor access the paper, he squeeze the paper and laughed

“ You're desperate” governor said

“ You made me who I am today, I'm following your footstep and ahn before I forget, that report is gonna be on the news tomorrow morning, trust me”

“ You deserve an accolade for being smart” Assemblyman Lee said and I glance at him

“ It's not yet your turn so keep shut and wait for your turn”

“ You're rude” Choi Jin said

“ Like I said, you made me who I am”

“ The two weeks is almost up” Sullivan said

“ You can't do anything”

“ Swan will be the one to end you guys” I said and the governor hit his hand hard on the table

“ Don't break your weak fingers” Sullivan said and I chuckled

“ He's an old man what do you expect”

“ Don't do anything to my daughter” the governor said

“ Just sit and watch how she's gonna carry my child, we're both an item now and she's now a part of me” I said and the governor throw a small glass cup at me and I was fast enough to dodge it

The glass break on the wall and I glance at him “ Old fool”

“ If she get pregnant trust me I'm gonna terminate it, she can't get pregnant for a monster like you” governor said

“ Not under my watch and again, I'm not a monster, you're the monster here”

“ I'm coming for you very soon” he said

“ Mr governor I will be expecting you, don't worry I'm gonna prepare your favorite dish for you”

“ Expect your weak men that's debating on how they're gonna sleep with Swan” Sullivan said and the governor glance at Assemblyman Lee

“ I'm gonna send you my wedding invitation card”

“ Shadow don't try me” governor said

“ You're gonna be a grandfather soon” I said as I laughed

Old cargo

23

Swan pov

I watch as he walk out of the room and I smiled, “ Cutie”, I turn around and face to the wardrobe,, I open the wardrobe and bring out the bag,,, instead of three bags, I saw five bags

How come???

I open the bag and saw different clothes, I fold the clothes and arrange it in the wardrobe,,, I open the second wardrobe and saw baby clothes

This should be Haeun wardrobe, I guess

Where's his wardrobe??, I glance round the room and saw a door,,, have never seen that door before, first time I'm ever gonna see it

I walk over to the door and slowly open it, I was welcome with coldness, I enter the room fully and saw different clothes

Male clothes and baby clothes, this should be his dressing room I guess

A big cardigan catch my attention and I rush to it and pick the cardigan

I take the cardigan and a black short then walk out of the room, I close the door and startled when I saw Thelma resting on the door staring at me

“ What are you doing there?” she asked and I rolled my eyeballs

“ When do you start caring about my affairs”

“ Don't reply my question with question” she said and I scoff

I throw the clothe on the bed and fold my hands under my boobs

“ Stop acting like you own me”

“ Crazy bitçh you are here to leech on him” she said and I chuckled

“ I'm rich on my own, I don't need his money before I can make it,,,,and again I'm a crazy bitçh, a crazy expensive bitçh” she scoff

“ Kim Swan” she said as she take a step forward

“ Thelma...” I said as I take a step forward

“ Do you love him” she said

“ That's none of your business”

“ It's my business so talk, are you in love with him” she said

“ Yes I love him are you jealous”

“ Why will I jealous when I know how to have him wrapped within my fingers” she said and I chuckled

“ Is like you don't have anything important to say so I will just leave” I said as I carry the clothes and walk away, I was about to enter the washroom when she grab my wrist

“ We're not done”

“ But I'm done” I said and forcefully remove my wrist from her grip and enter the washroom

I close the door and rest my head on the door breathing out

“ She's a pain in the a\$\$” I muttered, I take my clothes and have a quick bath

After bathing I wear the short with the cardigan without wearing any bra under there I notice something, the blood is not rushing again, it has stop

What's the meaning???

I hope it doesn't come like water later in the night, something like this have never happened, I walk out of the washroom and I could not find Thelma

She should have wait, I went back to the bathroom and pack the dirty clothes, I take it to the laundry room

When I get to the laundry room, I pack the clothes inside the washing machine and wait for the rolling to stop

I wonder where he went to???, Everywhere is boring without his presence And Thelma, I just don't wanna cross her lane, I quickly wash the clothe and when I was done, I dry it then went to the living room

There I saw Thelma staring at the TV as Haeun sat on her lap and her hand rest on her waist

“ When is he gonna be back?” I muttered as I walk past her and went upstairs, thank goodness she did not call me back

I went to room and crash on the bed as soon as I enter the room, I close my eyes and sleep in that position

Vinci pov

“ Where's Juran?”

“ At home so there's no how we can meet her” Sullivan said
and I wear my helmet, ignite the engine and drive out

“ Are we still going there?” Sullivan asked and I glance at him

“ Not anymore” I replied and increase my speed leaving him
behind

I love the shock I create on his face, the next meeting I'm gonna
have with him is gonna hot and deadly

Advertisement

something came to my mind and I sigh

Swan, is she gonna be fine now that she's alone with Thelma, I
just hope they get along cause they're not acting like someone
that's gonna get along at all

I drive into the house and park the power bike next to a red car
and Sullivan park his power bike next to me, I turn off the
engine and drop the key in his pocket

“ We need talk”

“ Go on...” he said and I rest on the power bike

“ I would love us to talk inside but Thelma is around, Sullivan I want you to release that report tomorrow, make it go viral”

“ Very simple, I will upload it on Twitter and send it to the news stations” he said

“ Will it go viral, remember Chaewon case”

“ If it doesn't go viral then we're gonna use Swan or we make Karina to say it out” he said and I fold my lip in

“ How are we gonna do that, explain better”

“ I'm gonna use a fake voice to talk to Karina and make her spill the truth while doing that, I will record our conversation” he said

“ Fake voice?? You mean you're gonna use a voice that sound similar to Julius voice”

“ Correct so doing that will take time” he said and I nod

“ So what should I do now”

“ Release the report to the accurate news station tomorrow morning so as soon as you're done with that, I will start working on the fake voice to support the evidence” he said and I nod

“ You pretty smart” I said and enter the house, I bring out my phone and call her line, Sullivan wall past me and I watch as he climb the stairs heading upstairs

“ Hello!!! Vinci!!!” I heard her voice, her voice bring me back to reality and I blink my eyes

Oh yeah the stuffs

“ Garam I need your help”

“ Sure go on” she said

“ I need you to get some undies for Swan”

“ What's her size” she said and I stop walking then take my lip in

“ You say what now”

“ Nevermind, I will get it for her” she said and cut the call

How will I know her size, all I know is that she have small waist and a perfect curvy shape that suite her

By the way where's she, I glance round the living room and I could see a glimpse of her, I saw Thelma coming out from the kitchen with Haeun, Thelma reach the dining table and Haeun move away from her crawling to the stairs

“ Vinci you're back” she said smiling and I nod

“ Where's Swan??”

“ Probably upstairs crying about her life or maybe she's gone”
she said and I twitch my lip

“ This is serious” I muttered

“ What do you say??” Thelma said and as she take a step
forward and I take a step backward

“ Nevermind”

“ Are you avoiding me??” Thelma said as she take a step
forward and I take another step backward

“ No Not at all”

“ Stop taking a step backward” Thelma said as she suddenly
drag me closer and kiss my lip

“ Vinci....” I heard her voice and I hastily push Thelma away, I glance at the stairs and saw Swan carrying Haeun, she rest on her shoulder as she look at the other side

“ Swan I can explain”

“ There's no need for an explanation, I saw everything” she said and I slap my forehead

“ Vinci...” Thelma called and I glance at her

“ Don't complicate things and quietly leave tomorrow morning” Swan said

“ Who's talking??, Who are you to send me out of his house?? like I said earlier, you're a bee leeching on him” Thelma said

“ Yes I'm bee but a bee with class and not a classless bee like you” Swan said

“ W.....Wh....Wha.... What!! What did you just call me” Thelma stuttered

“ You're an intruder so quietly leave while I'm being nice” Swan said

Okay I have a question, where's this braveness coming from, she threatened Julius and I could see that fear in his eyes and now Thelma

I kinda love this new Swan, this is really the new version of Swan

“ You're the intruder here not me, you're trying to take over his wealth GOLD DIGGER” Thelma said and Swan chuckled

“ Do you know my net worth, my fashion company can buy your whole generation hope you know that so don't ever call me that dirty name, I won't take that from you” Swan said and Thelma scoff

I went to sit on the sofa and watch them like a TV as they share a hateful glare

Are they're fighting over me or what???

“ You're a pox” Thelma said and Swan chuckled

“ It's fox not pox, F - O - X, FOX” Swan said and Thelma scoff

“ Are you trying to show off” Thelma said

“ You're below my level so I can't show off anything to you”
Swan said

“ Wow you're haughty” Thelma said

“ Thanks for the compliment, it's all thanks to you” Swan said

“ Are you trying to prove to me that you're smart, trying to prove to me that you studied in the state” Thelma said

“ Proving to you will be worthless” Swan said

“ What!!!!” she screamed

“ Vinci say something” Thelma screamed!!! And I close my eyes and open my eyes back

“ What do you want me to say?”

“ Vinci like seriously” Thelma said

“ Yo save your tears for another day” Swan said

“ Shut up” Thelma shouted!

“ Baby I need you, I want you and I miss your touch” Swan said and I widened my eyes, Thelma glance at me and I glance at her back

“ Swan...” I called

“ Come on baby I want you” Swan said as she pout her lip sweetly

She walk over to Thelma side and drop Haeun on her body

“ Take care of her, our new nanny” Swan said she screamed

“ Shh my baby hate noise” Swan said as she walk over to my side, she stay on top of me and kiss my lip deeply and I slowly reciprocate holding her waist firmly

We shared a passionate kiss but it was cut short by a loud scream

“ Baby let's go upstairs, someone is going crazy” Swan said as she pull me up and we walk out of the living room heading to the room

I held her waist as we enter the room and lock the door

“ You took long” she said and I kiss her neck

“ I'm sorry about that”

“ You deserve a punishment so don't touch me” she said and I hold her waist tightly

“ Swan you can't do that, that's the worst punishment ever”

“ Why can't you push her away when she kissed you” she said

“ It was sudden, I wasn't expecting it trust me”

“ Vinci I trust you cause I saw everything that happened, I just asked to know if you're gonna lie or not” she said and I smiled

“ I love you”

“ Love you too,,,, Vinci I have something to tell you” she said

“ What's the thing”

She slowly face me wrapping her hands round my neck

“ My monthly visitor is acting weird, it have suddenly stop” she said

“ Oh I think it's deceiver visitor” I said and she raise her eyebrow cutely

“ What are you saying??”

“ This same thing happened to Alice so hope it's not what I'm thinking”

“ What are you thinking?” she asked and I slowly turn her around

“ He's definitely gonna be a grandpa soon” I muttered smiling

“ Let's see if it's gonna be like Alice own” I muttered

24

Swan pov

We fall on the bed as he devour my lip sweetly and I moan everytime he touch my hip

“ Vinci....” I called

“ Mmm do you need anything” he said lowly as he slowly rest his head on my Boobs and I soothe his hair

“ You were saying something earlier”

“ Swan it seems you are pregnant but I'm not sure yet cause this same thing happened to Alice” Vinci said as he glance at me

“ Okay great...”

“ Is that all you are gonna say” he said and I sigh heavily

“ We're not sure so don't be happy yet”

“ Your Dad, I met him yesterday and I tease him about you getting pregnant” he said

“ What was his reply”

“ He said he's gonna kill the baby, he doesn't want us to be together” Vinci said as he chuckled and I held his cheek staring at his beautiful ocean eyes

“ Erase his bad words and forget about him, it's only me and you”

“ Swan I love you” he said and I nod smiling

“ So how's Juran, have you meet her??”

“ Well, we could not meet her yesterday cause she's at home and Julius is not ready to cooperate with us so we're going for plan B” he said

“ What's the plan B”

“ We're gonna release the report to a news station so it will be on the news tomorrow morning” he said

“ Will it go viral?”

“ If it doesn't go viral, we're gonna use a fake voice” he replied

“ Julius and Karina voice right??”

“ You're on point” he replied

“ We will need a sample of her voice then we will mix it with the fake voice so people won't detect it's fake”

“ How are we gonna do that??” he asked and I twitch my lip

“ I don't know,,,”

“ Maybe I should ask Sullivan” he said

“ That will be tomorrow morning so rest here while I go prepare your oatmeal” I said and he roll off and I hop off the bed and walk out of the room

I went downstairs and there's no one in the living room, I enter the kitchen and startled when I saw Sullivan covered in,,,, flour and saw Haeun body covered in flour

“ What's going on?”

“ She's ruining my food” Sullivan said and Haeun giggled as she slowly stand on the table clapping her hands

“ What do you wanna prepare??”

“ Pancake with pizza” he replied and I lick my lower lip in delight

“ Prepare it, I will take care of Haeun and I also want you to prepare oatmeal”

“ For Haeun??” he asked

“ No Vinci”

“ When did he start taking oatmeal” he said

“ Starting from today, please help me to prepare while i clean her up”

I carry Haeun and walk out of the kitchen, I climb heading straight to the room, I enter the room and met him sleeping peacefully on the bed

“ He's my man” I muttered as I smiled brightly, I open the wardrobe and bring out her pyjamas

“ Don't disturb Sullivan” I said and she nod as she pout her lip sweetly

We enter the washroom and I gently drop her in the bathtub and take off her clothe, I drop her pyjamas in the drawer

I hold her hand firmly so she won't slip cause she's jumping squealing happily, i stretch and take her soap, I rub it on my face and she close her eyes tightly,,,,,I wash her face thoroughly then suddenly the shower was turned on

Wh...o...

My breathe seize when I felt his hand round my waist, I perceive his fragrance and smiled

“ Vinci.....”

“ Her voice woke me up” he said and I glance at Haeun, her eyes are closed as water rush out

“ She's pretty”

“ Like you, I love your pretty face and smile, I love the way you pout your lip anytime you're angry” he said and I smiled

I hastily wash her body thoroughly and Vinci let go of my waist and carry her,,,,I walk over to the drawer and bring out a white towel

“ Let me clean her body” I said as I use the white towel to dry her hair then wrap it round her body

“ Vinci her pyjamas is in the drawer, please pass it to me”

He walk over to drawer and bring out her pyjamas, he pass it to me and I wear the pyjamas

I button up her pyjamas and she giggled, the pink pyjamas suit her smile, I check her arm and saw a plaster on her arm

The fall, that should be the staircase injury

“ Let me take it from here” Vinci said and I jolt out of my thought

He carried her and walk out of the washroom, I glance around and sigh heavily

“ What are you thinking about??” I heard his voice and I stood motionless without saying anything and without glancing back at him

“ I'm not thinking about anything, Haeun I need to take care of her” I said as I turn and face him, I was about to walk away when he held my two arms

“ She's fine, the door is closed and I use the pillows to guide her” he said

“ Let me check on her”

“ Swan something is going through your mind” he said and I sigh

He caught me, something really going through my mind, I'm thinking about a lot of things,,,,I'm bothered

“ Swan...m” he trailed as he cough, he use his hand to cover his mouth and slowly drop the hand down

I widened my eyes when I saw blood in his mouth

“ Vince...”

He cough out blood again and I hold him tightly, my eyes become misty immediately as I could feel those tears building up

“ Swan my fine” he said

“ Don't tell me you are fine, you're not fine”

He slowly let go of me and walk over to the sink, he raise his mouth thoroughly and glance at me

I rush over to his side and clean his mouth with my palm

“ Vinci I'm worried and I'm also scared, I don't wanna lose you but I just don't why I keep having this weird feelings that something is separate you away from me, I don't want our story to be an history, I don't want it to be a sad story” I said as I hold his cheek and sob loudly

“ Hey Swan stop crying, nothing is gonna separate us” he said and I nod sobbing loud

“ Don't pretend as if everything is okay, he said he's gonna kill my baby, I don't wanna lose anyone”

“ He's not gonna touch, I'm not if you're pregnant” he said

“ Vinci let's run away, I will help you to run your revenge pretty fast so we can leave this country”

“ Don't be scared nothing is gonna happen to you, I want to him feel that pain, I want him to beg for death so don't let us rush things,,, it's gonna be fine” Vinci said as he hug me tightly and I sob on his broad chest

He stroke my hair gently and I hug him tightly to myself

“ Everything is gonna be fine” he muttered and I nod

He disengage from the hug and clean my tears with his thumb

“ My clothe suit you perfectly” he said and I chuckled

“ I never knew you have a dressing room”

“ Huh I thought you know about it” he said and I nod

“ I found out about it yesterday”

“ My clothe are yours” he said and I nod smiling

He slowly bring his face closer and my itch for his lip, my body itch for his body

Vinci tease my lip, he bring his face closer then move his face away

“ You're teasing me”

“ Well cause you look cute" he said and I pull him closer and kiss his lip

We kiss slowly and he slowly remove his lip away and kiss the side of my lip, he bring his lip back to my lip and devour it intensely

He pull me and I jump on his body wrapping my legs round his waist and my hand rest on his hair, I shove my hand into his hair as we kiss intensely

I broke the kiss and he kiss my forehead then kiss my nose, he bring his lip to the corner of my lip and kiss it passionately

He shower kisses on my face before capturing his lip, he move over to the mirror, he shift his liquid soap aside and gently drop me on the thick cemented stand that's stuck on the wall

He broke the kiss and capture my lip again, his hands move to my body as he slowly take off the cardigan and drop on the stand

“ Vinci....”

“ This is a torture I really can't help it” he said huskily and hold his cheek

“ You can't wait for three days”

“ I wish to but you are a temptation and again it's not really flowing” he said huskily

“ We have to be careful I'm gonna get pregnant”

“ That's exactly what I want" he said and kiss my lip

He slowly pull the short together with undies and I glance at my short, it's neat no single stain

“ Vinci....”

“ Swan you're gonna be a mother soon” Vinci as his hand move on my lap, he touch va**na and slap it

I moaned softly as I stare at him

Our eyes locked as he thrust in two fingers and kiss my lip, he increase the finger to three and I mistakenly bite his lip

“ I'm sorry” he muttered and withdraw the third finger, he resume kissing my lip and continue thrusting in, he increase it to third finger again and I bite his lip as I moaned loud

He thrust it in fast, increasing his pace and I could feel the pleasure building up

Vinci kiss my lip as he thrust in fast and I moaned his mouth, I could his arm as the pleasure become too much

We heard a soft knock and I breathe out “ Vinci are you there??” I heard Sullivan voice and I glance at Vinci

“ Are you done with the preparation”

“ Yeah I'm done where's Vinci” Sullivan said and I glance at him

“ What should I say??”

“ Tell him I'm here with you” Vinci said and I rolled my eyeballs

“ I don't know anything about his whereabouts” I said

“ Come downstairs when you're done bathing” he said and I could hear his footstep

“ Why will you tell him that” Vinci said and I glance at him

“ I can't tell him you are here with me, it's embarrassing” I muttered as I pout my lip and look away

He smiled and bring his face forward, our forehead rest on each other as he smiled brightly

“ I'm sure he heard your moan so there's no need for you to hide it” he said amidst his laugh

“ You're laughing at me”

“ Well, cause you look cute” he said and I look away

He move his eyes away from my face to my Boobs “ Still intact that I wonder if I'm really the one that's touching you, I'm so lucky to have you”

“ I'm happy to be yours, I'm happy you're mine and no one else”

He take off his clothe and I move my hand to his belt, he glance at me and I smiled,,,,I unbuckle the belt and drag the trouser down

His manhood sprang up immediately in delight, he take off the trouser and now we're both naked

Vinci carried me as he walk over to the second shower, he turn it on as he rest my back on the wall, the water fall on us

“ Don't stop it, don't hide it, moan it out crazily” he said huskily as he slowly thrust in and hold his shoulder tightly

He hold my lap firmly, he slowly drop my right leg and hold my left lap, he tease my entrance with his phallus and I moaned like crazy

“ You're torturing me”

He thrust in and I moaned softly, he put the tip and slowly thrust everything in, I moaned loudly and he shut me up with a kiss

The water fall on us as our skin slowly jam against each other, he become fast and my moan increase

“ Mmm ouch!!”

“ Momma!!!”

“ You're sweet”

“ Yeah that spot”.

“ Please harder”

I spit het gibberish out and he increase his pace, my leg wobble as I hold his shoulder

He thrust out and made me turn around shooting a\$ out, I bend down a little bit and I could feel him thrusting it from behind

I screamed as my body adjust to his size, he pause and squeeze my Boobs

“ Go on....” he resume thrusting in and my moan increase

I moaned crazy girl, I moaned like a kitty under her big Mafia boss following orders

“ Mm Vinci” I moaned

He slap my butt cheek and I bite my lip, his right hand hold my waist so I won't lose my balance while his left hand move to my va**na teasing my clitoris

He increase his pace and groaned as he release his semen

I stood upright and face him, I kiss his forehead and he kiss my tummy

“ Let's go he's waiting for us”

I went downstairs and saw Vinci eating as he press his phone

“ Sullivan...” I called as I glance around

“ Sit and eat your food” he said and I chuckled

I drag out a chair and sit on it, I take the pizza and mount on it

“ Where's the oatmeal??”

“ Microwave...” he replied

“ Thank you”

“ It's nothing,,,” he said with his eyes fixed on his phone

“ Are you busy??”

“ I need to create a fake voice” he replied

“ Let me help you out”

“ How are you gonna do that?” Sullivan asked as he drop his phone on the table and focus his attention on me

“ Simple, you're gonna tape me and schedule a meeting with Karina, I will make her angry so she can say the main word you wanna hear”

“ Your idea is great but how are we gonna schedule a meeting with her?” I heard Vinci voice and I glance back

“ Your food is in the microwave”

“ A minute” he said and enter the kitchen

Soon he came back holding a thick plate with a spoon inside it, he take a spoon of the oatmeal and I smiled

He swallow the food and drag out a chair, he sit on it and glance at me

“ Continue...” Sullivan said

“ How are we gonna schedule a meeting with Karina” Vinci said

“ Throw a bait at her and see if she's not gonna bite it”

“ What's the bait?” Sullivan asked

“ That report send it to her then threaten her that you are gonna release it to the whole world and see if she's not gonna fall for it”

“ Sullivan work on it” Vinci said

“ I think I know her number offhand, should I call it out”

“ How do you know her line” Vinci asked as he glance at me

“ She made me memorize it against if I get lost or something bad is about to happen”

“ Call it out...” Sullivan said

“ Your phone”

I take his phone and type out the digit, I drop his phone on the table and face Vinci, I caught him staring at me

“ Eat your food”

“ Sullivan send the message to her and let's wait for her to fall for it” Vinci said as he stood and carry me in a bridal style

Sullivan chuckled as he take the plates to the kitchen “ Hey drop me down”

“ Let's go and sleep, my queen” he said and I laughed

***** THE FOLLOWING DAY ***

The following I woke up around 8am and prepare for myself, I wear a black leather pant with a black top and black jacket, I wear a black boot heel and let my hair flow freely

“ Perfect badass look” I muttered

I heard the sound of the door opening and I glance at the door to see Vinci

“ You ready??” he asked and I nod

“ I'm kinda nervous to face her”

“ Everything is gonna fine and let's us go according to the plan” Vinci said and I move closer to him

He gave me a phone and I access it thoroughly, Samsung Galaxy z flip 3

“ There's a wireless tape on that phone that's gonna record your conversation with her” he said and I nod

“ Thank you for trusting me on this”

He smiled as we walk out of the room and I saw Thelma, she wore a body hug gown that barely reach her knees

“ Vinci you're here” Thelma said smiling

“ Hey Thelma, Swan let's go” Vinci said as he walk past her avoiding physical contact

Good boy

He's taking my words serious, he's really addicted to me

“ I love this ugly face that I'm seeing” I muttered and she glared at me

“ F**k you bitçh” she cursed as she shot me a hateful glare

“ F**k your asshole” I cursed as I shot her a hateful glare

We walk out of the house and enter the car, Sullivan drive out of the compound and I keep accessing the phone

“ You love it??” Vinci said

“ I love the pink color”

He slowly park the car and turn off the engine, Vinci pass a black sunglass to me and I put it on with a black hat, he gave me a small black ear pod and I wear it in my left ear then use my hair to cover the ear

“ I'm gonna follow you into that restaurant but we're gonna go in separately” Vinci said and I nod

“ Make her a say those important words” Sullivan said and I nod

I get down from the car and enter the restaurant, I glance around and saw Karina, I walk over to her table and drag out a chair, I sit on it and take off my glass slowly

“ Step-mom how are you fairing” I said and she widened her eyes

“ Swan what are you doing here?? When did they release you?? Let's go home” she said rushing her words as she give me that fake smile

“ Drop the pretense and let's talk”

“ Swan what are you saying?? Don't tell me that bastard have poisoned your mind”

“ No he only made me realize the truth that I'm in a bloody family”

“ You change pretty fast” she said

“ Are you expecting me to be the same so you can ride my a\$\$ over and over”

“ Why are you here?” she said as she glance around and I wear the sunglass properly

“ Who's Julius??”

“ No one important” she replied

“ Oh,,,, Julius the biological father of Juran and Ethel”

“ How do you know he's the biological father of Juran and Ethel” she said

“ Swan perfect, that's the word I wanna hear” I heard Sullivan voice and chuckled

“ You say what”

“ How do you know that Julius is the biological father of Juran and Ethel” she said and I chuckled.

“ Story for another day”

“ You planned your kidnap" she said

“ I'm paying for my father's sin”

“ Your father,,,,geez you're so funny” Karina said as she laughed

People around glance at us and I glance around to see Vinci at the back staring at me

“ What do you mean”.

“ I guess your slutty mom did not tell you anything” she said and I raise my eyebrow

“ What are you saying”

“ David Kim is not your father” she drop the bomb and I blink my eyelashes

“ Swan make her spill the truth out” I heard Sullivan voice and glance at Karina

“ What do you mean??”

“ You see, your Mom and David Kim were married, months later your slutty mom mistakenly have a one night stand with your grandpa which result to you” she said and I felt my heart sinking down

“ You're lying, how can my grandpa be my biological father and how can my father be my brother,,, this is crazy”

“ Go and do a DNA test” she said laughing and I don't know when tears roll down my cheek

“ How can I do a DNA test for someone that's brain dead”

“ Swan it's possible, they can use a strand of his hair” I heard Sullivan voice and my breathe seize

“ Karina you are lying”

“ David was 27 when you came into existence so right now he's 50 so equation settled” she said and I angrily pour the glass of water on her face

“ You're a liar”

“ Why do you think you are grandpa's favorite, why are you everyone's favorite” she said

“ Does he know about it??”

“ It's only me, your father and mother that knows about it” she said smiling

“ Spare me that trash”

“ Let me do a proper greeting, I'm Karina Kim,,, Nice to meet you my sister-in-law Kim Swan” she said and I could my inner body boiling in fire

Someone should please tell me this is a dream

25

“ Let me do a proper introduction, I'm Karina Kim,,, Nice to meet you my sister-in-law Kim Swan” she said and I could my inner body boiling in fire

“ Liar...”

“ Swan don't fall for it, she's trying to toy with your emotions” I heard Vinci voice

“ Vinci get her out of there” I heard Sullivan voice

“ Karina do you have any prove cause it's impossible”

“ Sorry for the interruption, let's go” I heard Vinci voice and I felt someone touching my hand

I glance up to see Vinci holding my hand as he stare at Karina

“ Swan who's he??? Your runway boyfriend??” Karina said and I look away

I hold his hand tightly as I stood and walk out of the restaurant with him, I reach the car and I felt my body getting weak, I almost lost fall on the floor when Vinci grab me tightly

“ Stay strong I'm here with you” he said and I nod

Sullivan come out from the car and walk over to my side

“ You did well, you tried, you get the important word I wanna hear” Sullivan said and I could feel my body getting more weak

“ Swan don't fall for those lies, it's not true” Vinci said and I could see everywhere spinning, the voices start fading slowly, I tilt my head slowly as I try to see clearly but my body is failing

“ Vi....”

I fall on his arm and I could hear some faint voice, I could some faded voice, I slowly close my eyes as everywhere become dark

The sound of a lady voice made me open my eyes and I find myself on a big bed with no door and window

“ Swan.....”

I heard an unfamiliar voice and glance around, I saw no one,,,,I face front and flinch when I saw a lady on the bed sitting close to me as she stare at me

“ You're beautiful just like me” The lady said as she held my cheek tenderly

“ Who are you???.....”

“ Swan it's Mom,,,,, let's go home together” she said

“ No I'm not going anywhere, where am I???”

“ You're in a room, let's go home or instead let's escape from Karina” she said lowly as she hold my hand squeezing it lightly

“ Grandpa is my father right???”

“ Who feeding you with those lies” she said and I screamed

“ Talk to me, don't lie to me” I yelled!! And she smiled

“ If he's your father what are you gonna do about that cause you're trapped here” she said

“ Huh!! what are you saying???”

“ You're in a bloody family so why don't free yourself from this bondage and go and fight for your right” she said and I screamed

Where am I ???

“ Swan I'm here.. ” I heard Vinci voice and I glance around, I could not see him

Where's he??

Where am I ???

What's this???

How will I get out from here???

Is this a dream or hallucination??

“ Swan open my eyes” I heard Garam voice and I glance around

My eyes are opened where are you guys??

Vinci pov

I hold her hand tightly as she tilt her neck sweating hard

“ Garam why is she not waking up”

“ I don't know, she's suppose to be awake by now” Garam said
and I close my eyes tight kissing Swan hand

“ Please stay strong for me” I muttered silently

“ Vin....”

We heard a scream and I glance at Swan, she screamed as she
sit upright then glance around, I could see those tears rolling
down her cheek

Sh**t I hate to see those tears

She glance around then suddenly hug me, I stroke her hair as
she sob loudly

“ It's gonna be fine”

“ Vinci I saw my Mom, we talked,,,,, grandpa and everything”
Swan said

“ Swan you're hallucinating or should I say you create the dream” Garam said and Swan disengage from the hug and face her

“ What are trying to say??”

“ The dream you had is not a dream” Garam sai

“ It's now what?” Swan said

“ Your thoughts that turn into a dream” Garam said and Swan breathe out heavily as she slowly rest her back on the pillow and resume crying

“ Let's give her some space” Garam said and I stood from the stool and walk out of the room with Garam

“ Is she gonna be okay??”

“ She's gonna be fine, she just need some time to get over the shock and while we're on that,,, Vinci tell me what really happened”

“ I wanna get back at Karina but instead it seems she's on top of the game, she wanna rule the game”

“ What are you saying??” She asked

“ Swan grandpa is her biological father and her father is her brother”

“ That's crazy, it's impossible,,,, Karina is trying to toy with her emotions” Garam said

We walk downstairs “ That statement made her faint, her body find it hard to process it”

“ We can do DNA test to confirm” she said and I glance at her

“ The man is brain dead, he's gonna die soon,,,, he's surviving on oxygen”

“ We still need to confirm it, all I need is his hair and the governor's hair” she said

“ Getting the governor's hair will be difficult”

“ We can use his blood or ear wax or toothbrush or nail clipping” she said

“ Great but I don't wanna meet him” I said

“ We need his blood or hair to do the DNA test” she said

“ Garam why don't you meet him”

“ Vinci are you crazy??? You want me to meet that pedophile”
Garam half yelled and I nod

“ Just seduce him to make things easy for you” Sullivan said and
I glance at him

He's sitted on the floor in front of a table, in front of the table,
there's three laptops in front of him and the TV is on

“ How will I reduce that pedophile” Garam said

“ Should I refresh your memory, that night,,,, that seduction
you did in front of me last month” I said as I take a step forward
and she take a step backward

“ Stop talking...” she said

“ No let me refresh your memory”

“ I will do it” she said and I smiled

“ Thank you”

“ I'm not doing it for your sake, I'm doing it for Swan sake” she said and walk heading upstairs

“ Sullivan are you done?”

“ This is not an easy task but I release the report to the news station” he said and change the channel

I saw the report on the news and glance at him, “ You're talented”

“ What do you expect” he said and I stroke his hair smiling

BREAKING NEWS

WE RECEIVE A TIP FROM AN ANONYMOUS PERSON ABOUT
JURAN KIM

BEAVER IS UNDER FIRE FOR BULLYING CASE, SWAN IS UNDER
SHADOW'S CAPTIVE AND NOW JURAN KIM

JURAN KIM THE GOVERNOR'S FIRST DAUGHTER AND ETHEL ARE
CAUGHT IN A BIG WEB

THERE'S A TIP ABOUT JURAN AND ETHEL, THERE'S A REPORT
ABOUT THEM BEING AN ILLEGITIMATE CHILD

THIS IS THE EVIDENCE,

I saw the DNA paper on the screen and glance at Sullivan who's
focused on what he's doing

This guy, I keep wondering how he's able to do the DNA test on
the three of them

“ Sullivan...”

“ A minute ” he said as he press a keyboard on the laptop

“ That DNA test, how did you get??”

“ It was tip” he replied and shrug

“ From who??”

Donald, he receive the tip from someone” he said

“ You guys are passing tip to each other”

“ Sorry about that” he said and I nod

I turn off the TV and glance at the stairs to see Garam wearing a seductive clothes

“ Hey is it okay???”

“ Perfect, right now your governor is in his Villa” Sullivan trailed as he glance at the three laptops in front of him

“ Be careful, don't let him take advantage of you”

“ I have an pepper spray with me against if he try to touch me” she said and I nod

“ Good luck...” Sullivan said and Garam catwalk out of the house

“ I hope this work out well”

“ Trust Garam and I think you need to go and stay with Swan” Sullivan said and I nod

“ Where's Thelma and Haeun?”

“ They went to the Park” he replied and I nod

I stood and run upstairs, I enter the room and saw her on the bed, I could see her back view and from there I could tell she's sleeping

She have really pass through a lot so I don't wanna act selfish towards her by keeping her to myself

I walk over to the curtain and pull it down, I drag the curtain together

“ You don't have to cover the view” I heard her voice and I tilt my neck to see her staring at me

Her eyes are swollen, she really cry her eyes out, her eyes are red

“ Are you not sleeping”

“ I can't sleep, I keep having that dream that look like nightmare she said and I sit on the bed to her

She move closer and hug me tightly, I stroke her back then kiss her forehead

“ You have been through a lot”

“ I will overcome everything with you” she said

“ Swan I think you should go back home”

She glance at me then slowly disengage from the hug

“ Vinci I'm not ready for this conversation, we have talked about it over and over and I'm sick of hearing those words” she whispered as she resume crying

“ Staying with me will lead to more secret unfolding and the more the secret unfold, the more you get yourself in danger”

“ I will pretend as if we did not have this conversation” she said and I hold her hand

“ Don't pretend, I actually I kidnapped you to get back at your father and now the table have turn around, you capture my heart and I kidnap your heart”

“ So now you wanna release me

what if I get pregnant, what if he found out that I'm pregnant, what if he get rid of the baby, you said you are gonna protect me, you said we're gonna be together for forever so what are you saying now” she shouted as hot tears roll down her cheek

I hug her and she hit my chest hard, she push me away and was about to roll off from the bed when I grab her hand

“ Vinci let me be, don't f**king touch me” she said and yank my hand away

She enter the washroom and close the door, a part of me want her and another want to let her go

I just don't want her to get, I don't want her to see me get hurt,,,I don't want her to watch my death

The door open and I glance at the door to see Sullivan

“ Vinci I'm done” he said

“ So fast”

“ Donald helped me with it" he replied

“ Is she back??”

“ Are you talking about Garam?” he asked

“ Yes, is she back?”

“ Not yet, the task you gave her is not an easy task” Sullivan said and I nod as I rub my face with my palm

“ She's the only one that can pull it off, I would have send Thelma but she doesn't know anything about all this and I don't wanna involve her”

“ I pray it work out well” he said

The washroom door and Swan step out with her face soaked with water

“ Swan.....” Sullivan called

“ I'm hungry, can you prepare something for me” Swan said and Sullivan glance at me

“ I'm sorry Swan I won't be able to prepare a meal for you, I need to do something with Vinci,,,,, the fake voice is ready”
Sullivan said

“ Oh I understand, I will just prepare it myself”

“ Let me help you out”

“ I don't need your help, allow me to learn how to live without you so your absence won't affect me emotionally” she said and Sullivan glance at me

“ Bro what's she talking about??” Sullivan asked

“ Sullivan, Vinci is a coward and a promise breaker,,,,,he promised to protect me and now he wants to release into the lion's den without any ammunition” Swan said as she raise her voice a little bit

I could see sense that anger in her voice, Sullivan glance at me and I sigh

“ Swan just don't take his words serious, don't avoid him cause I hate malice tho I enjoy doing it to people” Sullivan said

“ Just tell him not to f**king touch until I'm okay” Swan said and walk out of the room

“ Hey Vinci..”

“ It's for her own good” I said

“ Can you do without her for a minute” he said and I glance at her

“ I will learn to”

“ Oh really, you guys are always eating each other every day and now you wanna let her go, how are you gonna cope,,,I know the stress I passed through when Alice died, you close your heart from everyone and she manage to open it and now you wanna send her away” he said raising his voice

“ So what should I do, I should let her watch me die, Sullivan I have limited time on earth, I live on drugs and you are saying I should I let her stay, how is she gonna cope if I die” I shouted!

“ Are you sick??” he said lowly and I look away

“ Delete my last statement from your memory”

“ What's the nature of your illness?” he asked calmly

“ I said delete my last statement from your memory”

“ Vinci I'm not gonna delete any f**king last statement” he shouted!

“ Thyroid cancer, is there a cure for it in Korea”

“ There is gonna be a cure, I will do a deep research for you, you're not gonna die mark my words” he said

“ Don't tell Thelma anything”

“ I won't tell her anything if only you make up with Swan, you guys can't be apart not now, not when we're about to win” he said and walk out of the room

“ This is harder than I thought” I muttered as I roll off the bed, I step out of the room and saw Sullivan walking downstairs

I went downstairs and went to sit on the couch, Sullivan sit on the floor then glance at me

“ That explain the reason why you hardly eat, the reason why you're taking oatmeal” Sullivan said and I nod

“ Hey Sullivan are you gonna eat steak too” I heard Swan voice and I glance at her

Swan pov

Coward!

He wants me to leave him

Not at this stage when he need love and attention

I eavesdrop on his conversation with Sullivan, I thought he doesn't like us being together but now I guess I was wrong

He said the word “ Make up with Swan” and I move away from the door and run downstairs, I hurriedly enter the kitchen and I could hear his footsteps

Sullivan and his crazy behavior, I chuckled as I open the fridge that's in the kitchen and open it

I bring out the beef meat packed in a thick nylon, I open the thick nylon and bring out the beef meat

“ Let me help you out” I heard his voice and ignored him, I close the fridge and bring out the chopping board that's in the cabinet and take a sharp knife

I bring out sea salt, black pepper, butter and oil, I drop everything on the table then walk over to the sink to wash my hand

“ Why are you ignoring” he said and I rolled my eyeballs

“ I'm learning how to live without you”

“ I hate this silent treatment” he said and I turn off the tap to face him, I startled when I saw him very close to me, there's no space between us

Swan grip yourself, don't fall his amazing charm and tempting lip

“ You said I should leave so I'm learning how to live without you”

“ So you wanna leave?? You can't stay adamant and stubborn” he said

“ So you were indirectly begging me to stay”

“ That's not what I mean” he said and I raise my eyebrow

“ Then what do you mean??”

“ Can't you be adamant, can't you refuse it, can't you chase me round the house, do you have to follow my words” he said and I don't know when I laughed

He stare at me pouting his lip, swrs I don't know how to get mad at him for long

I tip toe as I hug me and he smiled as he kiss my neck smiling

“ You have my weak point” he said and I glance at him

“ You're my weak point” he said and we hug again smiling

“ Just never tell me to leave you alone, we're together forever okay”

“ So will you allow me to prepare the steak for you” he said and I nod as I disengage from the hug

He wear an apron and I sit on the stool watching as he show off his cooking skill

I stare at him with affection, his pink lip, his eyes, his dimply, his smile,,,, everything about him is perfect

“ Vinci Garam is on her way same with Thelma ” I heard Sullivan voice and I glance at the door, I saw him holding laptop

“ Great so now play the voice record” Vinci said and Sullivan press a button on his laptop

I heard Karina voice all through the record and I glance at Sullivan

“ You're surprised right???, Only a genius can tell that the voice is fake the lines are breaking” he said

“ What lines??”

“ There's a technology that can detect fake voice” Vinci said Sullivan show his laptop

He play the record and I saw lines moving straight, breaking down and move straight up

“ The part that's breaking down is the fake voice” Sullivan said

“ So the part that's going straight is the origin voice” I said and he nod

“ Bingo you're pretty smart” Sullivan said and I chuckled

“ You can say that again”

We heard the sound of the door opening and I rush out of the kitchen with Sullivan

I saw Thelma carrying Haeun and Garam dressed up in a sexy outfit

“ Where's Vinci?” they asked in unison and I glance at Sullivan

“ Thelma is she sleeping?” Sullivan asked

“ Not really..” Thelma said and I stretch my neck to see Haeun closing her eyes every interval

“ She's gonna fall her asleep”

“ Are you a mother or what” Thelma said as she scoff

“ I'm gonna be a mother one day or maybe soon” I said and she scoff, Garam chuckled as she walk away

She walk past me and enter the kitchen “ Thelma please lay her on the bed” Sullivan said and she glance at me before walking away

We went back to the kitchen, Sullivan stood at the entrance to see if Thelma is coming

“ How was it?” Vinci asked

“ He tried having his way but I gave him sleeping pills then take his blood” Garam said as she bring a small slim glass bottle that's little bit filled with blood

“ Who are you talking about??”

“ Your father, we need to conduct the DNA test” Sullivan said

“ Where's your grandfather?” Garam asked

“ He's in New hope hospital”

“ Huh Garam that's where you work” Vinci said

“ What's his name?” she asked

“ Kim Yihan” I replied

“ VVIP patient, the doctors and nurses that are allowed to see him is just Eric, Mr Nam the director of the hospital and Lime”
Garam said

“ You're right, he's a VVIP patient cause my Dad doesn't want attention on my Grandfather”

“ To get his blood will be difficult” Sullivan said

“ Seduce him” Vinci said

“ Vinci like seriously do I look like a seducer to you” Garam said and I chuckled

“ Only the Kim family that have access to see him, I would love to help you but I'm under captive so you have to seduce one of them”

“ Swan are you supporting them” Garam said and I shrug

“ Thelma is coming” Sullivan said

“ Why are you standing at the entrance” I heard her voice and I scoff

She enter the kitchen and I glance at Sullivan, he turn off the gas and transfer the steak to a plate

He cut it in a small size and Thelma went to side and take a steak, she put it in her mouth smiling

“ Your cooking skills is amazing” she said and he nod

“ Swan come and eat” Vinci said and Thelma glared at me

“ Sure Oppa” I said

“ Op what!!!” Thelma said in America accent

“ I said sweetheart” I said in America accent

“ Wait did you just change your accent” Thelma said

“ I'm not a dummy like you”

“ Hey!!?” she screamed and I smiled

“ Keep screaming so you can lose your voice then we won't have to insult each other”

“ Hey Swan or whatever your name is” Thelma said

“ You just said my name correctly”

“ I think we need to get out from here” Garam said

“ Good idea” Sullivan said

“ But they're gonna hurt each other, there's sharp object in the kitchen” Vinci said

“ Then let's watch the show” Sullivan said

“ Go Thelma you have my support” Sullivan screamed as he clap

“ Sweetie you have my love” Vinci screamed and I smiled

“ Childishness is affecting you all” Garam said and Thelma glance at her

“ Swan let's end her life” Thelma said as she glance at me

“ Cut her head off” I said

“ No let's cut her mouth that's running fast” Thelma said

“ Psycho you're planning my death”

“ Say your last prayer” Vinci said

“ Our father Lord.....” Sullivan trailed

“ Save me from this monsters” Garam said

26

“ Eric who used the wool” Mr Nam asked and immediately I went to stay behind Eric

“ Tell him you're the one, I'm injure you now” I whispered

“ You say what now” Eric blurted out and the governor tilt his neck

“ Eric I'm sorry” I muttered as I bring out the syringe and pierce it through his skin, blood gush out slowly and I hastily hide the syringe back in my pocket

“ I'm the one, I injured myself by mistake when I was checking his health” Eric said as he show his injured palm to them

The governor glance at Mr Nam and they glance at us, the governor chuckled

“ Treat yourself” the governor said and we walk away

Eric collect a wool from the nurse and walk away, he press the elevator button and the door open

I enter the elevator with him, he press a button and the door slowly close

“ Eric I'm sorry”

He just nod without saying anything

“ What do you want to use the blood to do?” he asked

“ I'm sorry I can't tell you”

“ You can't tell me and I almost lost my license there because of you, Mr Nam is still gonna query me cause I'm sure he did not buy that lie” He said and I glance at him

“ When the time comes, I will tell you everything” I said and he ignored me

The elevator door open and he step out, I step out and follow him, we enter his office and I close the door

“ Eric are you still angry?”

He ignored me, he look smart in his uniform, a Blue long baggy pants with a blue top and a blue net

While mine is a green long pant with a green baggy top with a green net

He take off the net and glance at me “ Do you want me to undress in front of you”

I flip my eyelashes multiple times then glance around, the door suddenly open revealing a nurse standing

“ Sir we need you right now” the nurse said and I glance at Eric

“ VIP patient?” he asked

“ No she's not a VIP patient” she replied and rush out

“ Intern let's go” he said and wear his net back, he was about to walk past me when I held his hand

“ Let me do the surgery, just watch and direct me”

“ Mr Nam will be watching you from his office so let me handle it” he said and I hug him immediately

“ I'm sorry, just don't ignore me cause I'm doing all this for my cousin” I said and disengage from the hug

“ What do you mean?” he asked

“ I will explain to you later”

We rush out from his office and rush to the theatre room, I enter the room and they stare at me

“ Where's Eric?” Taemoo asked

“ He's on his way”

A nurse wear a clothe on me, more like a back jacket, she tie the rope behind then wear a glove on my hand, I move away from the door and Eric enter the room

“ You took long” Rita said and I glance at her

“ I'm sorry” Eric muttered

He wear the back jacket and wear the glove as everyone stare at him

“ Garam do the surgery” he said

I thought he doesn't want me to do the surgery, he glance at the patient then glance at me

“ Garam we have two hours to do the surgery” Rita said and I walk past Eric

“ I will direct you” He said and walk away

I stood in front of the patient and I sigh “ Is it heart transplant?” Eric asked

“ Yes and the heart is ready” Taemoo replied

“ The surgery is starting now, July 17 9:00pm” I said

“ Success for us” Rita said and we all nod

“ Scalpel” I said and the nurse drop the scalpel on my hand

I take the scalpel and tear his chest gently, Eric glance at me then smiled

After two hours, I walk out of the surgery room taking off the glove, I throw it in the bin before stepping out

I take off the green net and sigh heavily, I walk over to the elevator and press the button

The door slowly open and I enter the elevator, I was about to press a button when I heard a voice

“ Wait a minute” I heard a voice a familiar

“ Huh!!”

Rita and Eric appear at my front, they enter the elevator and Rita press the button, I rest on the wall and stare at them,,,,she keep smiling as if something tickling her brain

Tch!

“ Eric are you gonna be busy tomorrow?” Rita asked and Eric glance at me

“ Not at all” he replied lowly

“ Can we go out for lunch?” Rita asked

“ No I'm tired, I need to rest,,,, tomorrow is my off day” Eric replied

“ So you can't spare me an hour” Rita said

“ I have to meet someone very important tomorrow” Eric said and Rita frown

The elevator door open and Rita step out then bow at us, she smiled at Eric and I look away

The elevator door slowly close and Eric face me immediately “ Why are you cold?”

“ Nothing...” I replied lowly

“ Are you gonna be busy tomorrow?” he asked

“ Not really”

“ Can we have lunch at my house?” he asked and I widened my eyes

“ Y.....Yo....You....Your house”

“ Don't think otherwise” Eric said and face front

“ I'm not thinking otherwise”

“ Your cheek is already red” he said and I cover my face with my palm in embarrassment

The elevator door open and he step, he glance back then smiled

The door close and I release the breathe I have been holding for long

“ Gawd sh**t” I cursed

Garam don't fall for charm, don't fall for his charm, don't let his charm work on the you

The door finally open and I step out from the elevator, I went to the dressing room and saw no one there

Where's she???

I walk over to my bag and bring out the small bottle, I put the small long bottles in my pocket and walk out of the room,,,,I went to the lab and bow at the people at the people there

A lady walk past me and I hold her hand “ I wanna do a DNA test”

“ Follow me” she said and enter a room, I followed her in

“ Where's the sample?” she asked and I hastily bring the bottles and syringe

I gave it to her and she glance at me “ Name??”

“ Kim....” I trailed

“ Kim what” she asked and I glance around

“ Is it necessary to say the name??”

“ The come back for the result next week” she said

“ It's too far, please can you make it snappy”

“ Tomorrow morning come back for the result” she said and I smiled

“ Thank you” I bow at her and she walk away

Swan pov

“ So you're leaving”

“ I need to meet up with my flight” Thelma said as we walk out

“ When next are you coming?” Sullivan asked and she smiled

“ Maybe next year” she replied and Sullivan chuckled

“ It's too far” I said and she glance at me smiling

“ Take good care of Vinci, don't break his heart and don't make him cry” she said and I nod

“ You're accepting a defeat”

“ No the fight is still on” she said and I chuckled

“ I can't wait to pull off your hair”

“ And I can't wait to cast you out of the house” she said and I laughed

Thelma take a step forward and hug me “ Take good care of him and don't hurt him cause that guy you seeing is a weak guy so please don't hurt him” she said

“ I won't hurt him”

Sullivan park her bag inside the car and she enter the car and drive out

“ I'm missing her already” Sullivan said and I glance at him

“ She's crazy and fun to be with”

We went back inside the house and Sullivan lock the door, I went upstairs to check if he's awake

I open the door and saw Haeun in front of me crying, I hastily carry her and close the door,,,,I move away from the door heading downstairs so her cry won't wake him up

“ Haeun what's wrong??”

She keep crying and I rush to the couch

Advertisement

I sit on the sofa and check her diapers, it's neat

I touch her tummy and it's,,,,, EMPTY, it's light

She's hungry, I clean her tears with my thumb and she whimper

“ Let me get you something”

“ What's wrong?” Sullivan asked and I glance at him

“ She's hungry, can you prepare her milk and oat separate”

“ Sure a minute” he said and walk away heading to the kitchen

“ Haeun don't cry the food is gonna be ready soon okay” I said and she just rest her head on my chest and her hand rest on my Boobs, I stroke her back gently and she stop crying

Sullivan come back with a nursing bottle filled with milk, I open the bottle and put it in her

She mount on it as her hand hold the bottle tightly “ Let me go and prepare the oat meal” Sullivan said

“ Include him too”

“ I will be back” Sullivan said and walk out

Haeun stare at me as she drink the milk, I clean the side of her lip and watch as she gulp everything down

“ Swan....” I heard his voice and glance at the stairs

He walk downstairs and come over to my side, he suddenly peck my lip smiling and I chuckled

“ Do you dream??”

“ No but this is gonna be the first time that I'm gonna sleep for long, sleeping without thinking about anything” he said lowly and I smiled

He sit next to me and I rest my head on his shoulder smiling

“ Thelma is gone”

“ Pretty fast” he muttered and something cross my mind

“ Vinci can you do something for me??”

“ Name it” he replied

“ I want you to go to the hospital tomorrow for medical test”

The smile on his face slowly fade away “ Garam sent you to me right??” he asked and I nod

“ Vinci please just go, I can follow you if you're not comfortable”

“ There's no need for that” he said lowly and look away

“ So are you gonna go???”

“ I will think about it” he replied, I hold him chin with right hand and turn it making him to face me

“ Don't think about anything, just go there tomorrow okay”

“ Yes ma'am” he said and cover Haeun face

He capture my lip and I reciprocate smiling as we kiss passionately

“ Really?? Do you have to do this here” I heard Sullivan voice and hastily break the kiss

“ You're here” Vinci said and Sullivan nod

“ Just keep eating each other raw” Sullivan said as he carry Haeun and walk away

“ He caught us”

“ Let's leave here” Vinci said as he stood and stretch out his hand

I rest my hand on his hand and he intertwine it as we walk out of the living room heading to the swimming pool

“ Haeun really like you” Vinci said and I glance at him

“ She's beautiful and she's gonna be a smart kid”

“ She takes after her mother” he said

“ Alice, how was her personality?”

“ Well she's beautiful, caring, smart, open and sweet” Vinci replied and glance at me

“ You still love her???”

“ She's dead already so I have to let go of her so she can rest in perfect peace and I think I'm madly in love with someone” Vinci replied as we stop walking and face me

“ Who's the lady???”

“ You're the one, Kim Swan I love you and I want you to spend the rest of your life with me” he said and I smiled

“ Are you proposing?”

“ I forgot the ring” he replied and I laugh as I hit his chest playfully

“ You're proposing right??”

He nod “ Is that a Yes?” he asked and I nod smiling

My“ Your proposal is funny but Aldo's own was,,,,, worst”

“ Tell me more about it” He said as he sit on the chair and drag me down, he made me sit on his lap and he wrap his hands round my waist

“ You know when a guy want to propose, he's gonna say a little speech but Aldo did not do that,,,,,he just went straight to business by putting the ring on my finger without asking anything”

“ This is why I'm gonna say I'm different from him” Vinci said and I nod

“ You're really different from him”

“ I love you” he muttered

“ Love you too”

I kiss his lip deeply and he reciprocate, his hand roam my hip and I switch my position,,,,I sit on his lap properly and squeeze my butt, I broke the kiss and rest my head on his shoulder feeling a sharp headache and tiredness

“ Swan are you okay???” he asked

“ I'm feeling headache and I'm tired”

“ Should we go inside” he said and I nod

“ You need to eat”

“ I will eat so let's go inside” he said and I get off from his body, I hold his arm for support as we enter the living room

Vinci carry me in a bridal style heading upstairs, he enter the room and gently drop me on the bed

He use the duvet to cover my body and kiss my forehead

“ Sleep and don't think about anything” he said and I close my eyes as sleep take over

“ Mmm whatever” I muttered as I back him and clutch onto the duvet

“ Vinci...”

“ Do you need anything?” Vinci asked and I rest my back on the bed with my eyes closed

“ I'm having a bad feelings”

“ About what??” he asked

“ That something is gonna happen soon, I keep having this bad feelings”

“ Nothing is gonna happen” he said

“ Vinci if my Dad break in right now to rescue me what are you gonna do?”

“ Swan you need to rest” He replied and the door suddenly open

I open my eyes and see Sullivan rushing in holding an iPad, I glance at Vinci only to see him sitting on the stool next to the bed as he hold my hand

“ Vinci why is this thing ringing loud, I try every possible way to stop it but it keep ringing” Sullivan said as he show Vinci the iPad

I sit upright and peep into the iPad, I saw a car driving

“ What's this?”

“ CCTV” Vinci replied

“ No I'm not talking about the car, I'm talking about the plate number” I said and they glance at me

“ Swan what are you trying to say??” Sullivan asked

“ Vinci why is it ringing?”

“ Something suspicious is going on” Vinci replied and he glance at me then glance at Sullivan

“ I don't get” Sullivan said

“ Someone is trying to break in and see that car is passing by again” Vinci said

“ The plate number look familiar” I muttered

“ From where??” Sullivan asked

“ Have seen that plate number before,,,,I can't remember.....wait...” I trailed as I rub my forehead

“ Vinci I can't remember” I trailed

The car pass again and this time it stop and a man get down from the car, he hold a paper as he staring at the building

“ Park Solomon” I muttered

“ Who's he??”

“ He's my Dad personal guard and mess cleaner” I replied and I watch the video keenly

“ Mess cleaner, what do you mean by that?” Sullivan asked

“ He's the one that's always cleaning my Dad mess and if he can't clean it, Choi Jin will clean it” I replied

“ Zoom it so I can read his lip” I added

Vinci zoom the video and I read his lip carefully and say it out

“ This can't possibly be the monster's house cause this is house is too good for him” I say it loud

He brought out his phone and put it on his ear “ The address is wrong” I read his lip and say it out

He enter the car and drive away, they glance at me and I rest my back on the pillow

The iPad stop ringing and I sigh “ Vinci...” Sullivan called

“ I know something like this is gonna happen cause we can't hide forever, Sullivan park the Haeun's clothes, the evidence and your clothe too” Vinci said

“ Why?? What are you planning??”

“ You will know tomorrow” Vinci replied as he smirk and Sullivan glance at me

What's going through his mind??

TBC

27

The following morning, I wear a multi color chevron gown and walk out of the room wearing a pink hairy bedroom slippers

I knock on her door before opening it, I enter Garam's room and found no one there

Twitching my lip, I guess she's yet to be back

I walk over to her mirror side and open the lower drawer and saw a straightener

Exactly what I need, I bring out the straightener and glance around to see if I can find any socket

Luckily I found one next to the bed, a phone charger is plugged to it and I unplugged it then plug the straightener

I hold the straightener then use it to straighten my hair, after straightening the hair, I unplugged it then return it back to the drawer

“ You're beautiful” I muttered as I stare at my reflection in front of the mirror

My hand slowly move to tummy and I caress it smiling

“ A baby is growing in my tummy, I can't believe I'm gonna be a mother” I muttered

I walk out of the room then went downstairs, I saw Sullivan and Vinci talking looking serious

“ Good morning” I greeted and bow

“ Swan you're here” Sullivan said and I nod

I drag out a chair and sit on it, Vinci is at my left hand side and Sullivan is at my right hand side

“ Vinci what's your plan??”

He glance at me then glance at Sullivan “ Nothing...” he muttered and stood then walk away

“ Sullivan are you guys hiding something from me??” I asked and he slowly stand

“ We're not hiding anything” he said lowly and was about to walk away when I stand and hold his hand dragging him closer

He widened his eyes and I wear a stern face “ You and I know that my father is coming here so tell me what's your plan”

“ He said I should not tell you anything” he said

“ Why??? Huh!! Why??”

“ He doesn't want you to break down” he replied

“ Sullivan tell me, I won't cry trust me”

“ He's planning on surrendering himself” Sullivan said and I felt my heart sinking down, I slowly let go of his hand

“ Why will he do that, we have enough time to escape, we can leave this country for them”

“ Talk to him” he said and walk away

I glance around and I could not find Vinci, I check the kitchen he's not there, I check the pool he's not there and I run upstairs to the room

And there I find him smoking as he face the window

“ Vinci.....”

“ He already told you” he said and I rush over to his side, I snatch the cigarette from him and match it with my slippers

“ What are you thinking, what rubbish is going through your mind” I yelled! And he face me

“ We can't keep running forever, we have to face and end it,,,,,I don't want to be a coward” he whispered

“ You don't want to be a coward and you're indirectly me to those treacherous people, those people that are seeking for my dead body” I yelled!

I let the tears out, I sob loudly and he hug me soothing my hair

“ Let them feel like a champion then you will use that opportunity to end them” he said and I slowly raise my head to face him

“ What are you trying to say??”

“ He's gonna keep me in captive and make you get married to Aldo, try to be pretend as if you're on his side and use that opportunity to gather a lot of evidence and witness” Vinci said and I move away from him

“ What if you die, what if I die before I find the evidence, I don't wanna lose anymore”

“ You're not losing anyone, I'm just gonna spend a week there so use that opportunity to gather a lot of evidence and send it to the press, punish those politicians and after that, we will escape” he said

“ Vinci I hate you”

“ I love you” he said

“ I hope this your annoying plan work out well”

“ Swan it's gonna work out well if you play your card well” he said and I hug him

“ Haeun is gonna have a younger brother soon”

“ You're pregnant?” he asked and I nod

“ So please think of a better plan than this”

He slowly disengage from the hug and kiss my lip deeply

We kissed as we slowly fall on the bed, he slowly move his lip from my lip to my neck then trail kisses all over my face

“ Swan I love you” he said and I moaned softly

“ Be gentle” I said and he chuckled

“ Can't promise you that”

Vinci pov

I watch as she sleep peacefully after the sweet s£x, my hand slowly touch her face and I caress her cheek

“ Swan I'm sorry” I muttered and peck her lip

I roll off the bed and wear my clothe, a black joggers with a black hoodie and a black thick scarf tied round my neck, I take my white canvass and tip toe out of the room

As soon as I step out, I wear the canvass and saw Garam coming upstairs

“ Welcome back”

“ Thank you” she said lowly

“ Are you tired??”

“ Definitely, I need to rest” she replied

“ Don't rest yet”

“ Vinci why??” she asked lowly

“ I'm ready to go to the hospital for the test”

“ Oh great later” she said and was about to walk away when I grab her hand

“ Let's go now before I change my mind”

She grit her teeth and I smiled, I let go of her as we walk downstairs

“ Sullivan I will be back soon”

“ Where are you going to?” he asked

“ To the hospital” Garam replied

“ Oh right, the DNA result” Sullivan said and I glance at Garam

“ They're not siblings, Karina was just toying with her emotions” she said and walk out of the house

“ Take care of them”

I take the car key that's on the table and walk out of the house,
I take the white range rover car and drive out of the building

Garam wear her seatbelt and rest her head on the window with
her eyes closed

“ Do you wanna sleep?”

“ Yeah I wanna take a nap, when you have reach there just
wake me” she replied lowly

“ When are you gonna end the night duty?”

“ Tonight is the last day” she replied

“ The Governor is coming for us soon so don't bother coming
tonight, just go straight to the other Mansion, Sullivan and
Haeun will join you”

“ What about you and Swan?” she asked

“ I'm gonna surrender myself, make them feel like a champion before clearing off their existence”

“ Vinci he might kill you” Garam said

“ He can't me without the evidences”

“ How long are you gonna stay there?” She asked

“ Just a week”

“ This is dangerous, why can't you just escape” she said

“ We can't hide forever, if we keep running away he's gonna find us so it's better we end it”

“ So any plan?” she asked

“ Swan is gonna be the one to end them, I will just assist her by leveling up her anger”

“ What do you mean?” she asked

“ Just watch and see” I replied

I park the car in front of the hospital then get down from the car
Garam get down from the car and enter the hospital, I followed
her in and we went straight to the elevator

We enter the elevator and the door slowly close, she press a
button and I watch as the number read

“ I hope you are not gonna make a mistake” Garam said

“ It's gonna go perfectly”

The elevator door open and we step, we walk past five glass
doors before stopping in front of the door

We enter the room and I saw the doctor that attended to me
few months ago

“ Mr Oh” Garam bow and I bow again

“ Garam you're here” Mr Oh said and I went to sit on the chair
in front of his table

“ And you're Vinci right?” he said and I nod

“ Doc the illness is back” Garam said and the man glance at me before sitting down on his chair

“ Which stage?” he asked

“ I don't know yet so I want you to run some test on him”
Garam replied and he nod

“ Let's go”

After the test we went back to his office and I sit on the chair glancing around

“ Garam the test is out” Mr Oh said and Garam glance at me

“ What's the result??” she asked

“ Final stage” he replied

“ Vinci....” Garam called and I glance at her

“ Any cure??”

“ There's one but it's not in Korea” Mr Oh replied and I widened my eyes

“ Oh goodness finally” Garam said

“ How do you contact the doctor?”

“ It will take days” the doctor replied

“ Please make it snappy” Garam said

“ I will update you” Mr Oh said and I stood then walk out of his office

Garam rush out and follow me, I enter the elevator and she enter the elevator

She press a button and the door slowly close, “ Are you not happy?” she asked and I glance at her

“ Are you expecting me to be jumping around”

“ Try to look happy, you are finally gonna live long with your girlfriend and kids” she said and something cross my mind immediately

“ The ring”

“ Wait are you planning to propose to her?” Garam asked

“ Change your statement, it's fiancé not girlfriend”

The elevator door open and I step out, “ How are you gonna propose to her?” She asked

“ Normal way they are proposing to a girl” I replied

“ Vinci stop walking fast wait for me” She said

“ I don't want her to be worried so I need to get home fast before she wake up”

I press the button on the key and the car unlock, I open the car door and enter the car

Garam enter the car and wear her seatbelt, I ignite the car engine and drive away

“ Do you know where they're selling the ring?”

“ Down the street, the junction” she replied and I nod

“ How's your doctor boyfriend?”

“ Hey he's not my boyfriend” She said and I snuck my tongue at her

“ I know you are gonna deny it”

“ We're not dating” Garam said

“ But what about the way he stare at you, I'm sure he's the one that help you to get the blood sample”

“ He's inviting me over to his house” Garam said

“ You have finally find love and about what happened between us two months ago....”

“ Oh the s£x, I was lusting over you that time but not anymore so don't worry” she said smiling

“ I'm not worried” I said and park in front of a store, I get down from the car and she get down from the car then follow me in

“ The store is beautiful” she said

“ Should I buy the building for you”

“ Buy it and I'm gonna sell it out” she said and I chuckled

We stop in front of a lady and I could see different type of rings

“ Which one do you want to buy?” the lady asked

“ A diamond ring” Garam replied

“ Why diamond ring?”

“ Your girlfriend is expensive so buy diamond ring” Garam said and I face the lady

“ Diamond ring”

“ What's her size?” she asked and I glance at Garam

“ Same size with her finger”

“ Her finger is small geez” Garam said

“ The both of you are small” I said and she frown her face

“ Sir the ring is ready” the lady said as she give me a small bag

Advertisement

I bring out my card and give it to her, I press my pin and she press the amount then show it to me

I press another pin and the transaction went successfully

She open the bag and I saw a small box there, I take the bag and walk out of the store

“ You enjoy embarrassing me in public” Garam said

“ And you enjoy acting like my sister”

We enter the car and I resume driving, “ Vinci are you still gonna go on with that plan?” Garam asked and I nod

“ Can't you run away and leave her there” she said and I sigh

“ Allow me to surrender myself and I want you to use that opportunity to contact the foreign doctor”

“ Vinci I'm still not in support of this” she said

“ Nothing is gonna happen to me, I won't die”

“ Keep to your words” Garam said

“ The ring, don't tell Swan about the ring until everything is over”

“ If you don't come out after one week I'm gonna burst into that place and kill that bastard” Garam said and I chuckled

“ You have my permission, just don't worry okay”

“ You said I should don't worry, what about you tell your plan, I wanna know everything” Garam said and I glance at her

“ I'm gonna be under his captive, that's gonna give Swan the strength and energy to end those treacherous people”

“ Can't you leave, I believe she's gonna do it well” she said

“ They are gonna manipulate her, Karina toy with her emotions and she fainted, what if her father or Karina try to toy with her again or what if they threaten her; Garam, you and I know that Swan can't control her softness and emotions”

“ You're right, David Kim is very desperate” she said

“ If I'm under his captive receiving hot torture and they try to manipulate her emotions I'm sure she won't fall for it cause she won't be able to bare the pains of losing her love ones”

“ You're right but hope you're gonna die” she asked

“ He can't kill me so relax”

I slowly drive inside the compound and park the car, I turn off the engine and unbuckle my seatbelt

Garam get down from the car and enter the house walking sluggishly, I open the small bag and take the box, I put the small box in my pocket

I get down from the car and enter the house, I saw Sullivan and Swan sitted on the floor playing game

Haeun is in her stroller giggling as she stare at the TV, I glance up and saw Garam climbing the stairs

“ I'm back”

“ Where were you??” Swan asked without glancing at me

“ Hospital, I went to see the doctor”

“ So any positive response?” Sullivan asked

“ There's a cure but the cure is not in Korea, I have to do surgery”

“ Oh really, oh goodness finally” Swan said smiling as she play the game

“ You're not gonna jump on me, stop playing the game with him”

“ Swan someone is getting jealous” Sullivan said

“ I'm gonna deal with him later in the bedroom” Swan said as she wink at me and I laughed

“ Haeun do you miss your daddy” I said as I carry her and she smiled

I kiss her cheek and giggled, she suddenly bring her face closer and kiss my forehead

“ Dad..” she called and I laughed

“ Finally you can talk”

“ Wait you don't know she can talk” Sullivan said

“ Shut up I know”

Swan laughed “ Someone is about to explode” she said and Haeun giggled as if she understand what she's saying

“ Swan...”

“ Baby don't be jealous” She said

“ I'm not jealous”

“ Vinci it's obvious”

***** Later in the night

Swan pov

“ Don't tell me you are still jealous about what happened in the morning”

“ Swan I'm not jealous” Vinci said as he was about to walk out of the room when I hug him

“ Vinci....”

“ Kim Swan” he muttered

“ We're home alone so let's enjoy this moment in love and not in anger”

He slowly face me and kiss my lip “ I'm not jealous and I'm not angry” he said and I smiled

“ Let's go downstairs” I hold his hand and he intertwine it as we went downstairs

“ Are you hungry?” he asked and I nod

“ No I'm okay,,,,when are we gonna go to the other Mansion to see Sullivan and Haeun?”

“ Tomorrow morning” He replied smiling and I smiled

“ Let me have your phone” I muttered and he raise his eyebrow

“ Huh!!”

“ We don't have a picture together so I wanna create one for the both of us”

He slowly bring out his phone and I switch it on, I went straight to camera and drag him closer

“ Vinci smile”

He stare at me and I snap the the picture smiling “ Your smile is beautiful” he muttered and I glance at him

“ We're waiting for the worst to come”

“ You're beautiful so don't let them toy with your emotions, be a brave lady, show them that braveness you showed me two months ago” he said and I nod smiling

My eyes become misty and I look away “ Smile let's take another picture”

I keep snapping until I heard a loud sound, I glance at Vinci and he walk over to the iPad that's on the table and I followed him

The tears roll down as I saw some men jumping over the fences, some are holding stick while some are holding gun

“ Vinci don't tell me it's now”

“ Swan don't cry” he said and I sob loudly

I watch as Choi Jin and my dad lead them, Vinci drop the iPad on the table and Vinci hold my hand and we fall on the couch that's far from the door

“ The phone, keep it safely” He said and I give him the phone

He switch off the phone and put it on my gown waist, he take off his scarf and use it to tie my waist covering the phone

“ Don't lose it” he muttered and I nod

I heard a loud bang on the door and my heart start beating fast

“ Swan I never expect him to be this fast” he muttered

“ Vinci I'm scared”

“ Don't be scared” he said and kiss my lip

He bring out a black box from his pocket and open it, I saw a shining diamond ring and another fresh tears roll down

“ Vinci...”

“ I know this is gonna be the worst proposal ever, I just feel I should give this ring so after dealing with those treacherous people we should get married” he said

“ Vinci...”

“ I'm bad at proposing, Kim Swan will you marry me” he trailed and I laugh amidst the tears

“ Definitely, I will marry you”

He gently put the ring on my finger and kiss my finger

“ Stay strong” he muttered and the door burst open immediately

He kiss my lip deeply and move away “ Our amicable governor, what an unexpected visit, sorry I forgot to prepare your favorite meal” Vinci said as he laughed

“ You bastard shut up” my Dad growled and I flinch

“ Father....”

“ My baby, I'm sorry I'm late” he said

“ I really enjoy your daughter, damn she's so sweet and now I know the reason why you sleep around with young girls using scholarship to deceive them but I hope this sweetness and greediness doesn't kill you” Vinci said and my Dad screamed

“ What are you waiting for???, Beat this bastard” he growled and the men all rush at Vinci

They all mount on him and beat him pretty hard, hot tears roll down my cheek as I watch him laugh as they hit him hard

I hate my life

I don't want him to die because of me

Vinci why are you doing this to us

“ Daughter let's go home, they're all waiting for you” My Dad said as he hug me and I sob loudly

“ Tell them to stop hitting him, don't let him to die”

“ He deserve to die cause he torture and rape you” he replied
and I glance at Vinci

“ Please tell them to stop” I said sobbing loudly

“ Stop hitting him” My Dad said and the man kick him then
move away

I rush over to his side and touch his bruise body, I touch his lip
and he keep staring at my father

“ You think hurting me is gonna make you feel better, no you're
wrong, I'm gonna reveal your ugly face to the world” Vinci said

“ You,,,, geez you're funny, how are you gonna reveal my face
when you are gonna be under my captive” My Dad said

“ Someone else will do it, just watch and see how the drama is gonna unfold, watch and see how the person gonna pull all of you down to the lowest level” Vinci said as he stare at me

Wait,,,,, is he telling me to pull him down

I suddenly remember his word “ I'm gonna give you the evidence so the ball will be in your court, decide if you're gonna reveal their face or you're gonna support them”

That word keep ringing in my ear as I glance at the both of them

TBC

28

The ride home was pretty silent, I keep glancing back to see the black car that my dad threw Vinci into

“ Why are you glancing back?” I heard his voice and I hastily face front

“ Nothing....”

He touch my cheek and I hastily move away from him gumming my other cheek on the window

“ Are you avoiding me now, what have that monster done to you” My Dad said and I close my eyes

“ He showed me love, a genuine love that I thought I was feeling when I was with you” I imagine myself saying that statement

“ I'm just tired” I muttered silently and he nod

The car drive inside the compound and I get down from the car,
I watch as the other cars drive in and they drag Vinci out

My poor baby

They drag him to a building and I could see him staring at me,
he gave me a reassuring smile and I nod

I can't believe he's smiling in this kind of situation, I believe in
him

“ Swan let's go inside, it's late” My Dad said and I enter the
Mansion without replying him

I saw Juran and Ethel standing on the staircase, Juran rush to
my side and she was about to hug me when I bend down and
she hug the door

“ Swan ...” she called and I stand upright

“ I'm exhausted” I muttered and walk away, I climb the stairs
and walk straight to my room, I enter my room and close the
door

“ Swan you have to be strong for Vinci” I muttered as I take off my chevon gown and wear my pink pyjamas

I heard the sound of the door opening and I glance at the door to see Yiga

“ Swan” she squealed happily and I sit on the bed flipping my hair backward

“ I miss you” She muttered and I just stare at the washroom door without replying her

“ Yiga I'm not in a good mood, I don't feel like talking” I said lowly as hot tears roll my cheek

“ Swan what's wrong?? Are you not happy that you're free from that monster” Yiga said as she enter my room fully and lock the door

“ He's not a monster, If you're looking for someone to call a monster that should be my father”

“ Swan what are you saying?” She asked

“ Yiga don't lie to me, my father raped you right?”

“ Swan,,,” she called

“ Don't deny it”

“ He once raped me” she said lowly

“ Now tell me is he not a monster”

“ Swan he's your father, you can choose that stranger over your father” Yiga said and I scoff

“ Father ruined his life, he made him an assassin and now you're telling me not choose him over my father”

“ Swan don't let him manipulate yo.....”

“ Leave, leave my room right now” I interrupt her and she widened her eyes

“ Swan I should leave??” She asked and I look away

“ I will prove to all of you that he's a monster” I muttered and I heard the sound of door closing

She's gone

I hop off the bed and went to lock the door then hop on the bed, I take the phone and unlock it

Haeun picture showed up and I start crying, she's cute, I will hard to expose their damn secret, I check his pictures and stare it

My eyes move to the diamond ring that's on my finger and I smiled amidst the tears

“ He's so romantic”

“ That was the best proposal ever”

I will work hard so we can reveal their ugly faces and prevail justice for Chaewon, I hide the phone under the bed and lay properly on the bed, I drag the duvet and close my eyes and sleep

***** THE NEXT MORNING

I keep staring at the ceiling without making an attempt to stand, my hand rub my tummy as I keep sighing at every interval

How's he feeling now??

Is he okay??

I'm worried about him

Vinci please stay strong for us, I will work this out pretty fast

The sound of a phone ringing interrupt my thought and I move hand down to take his phone, I check the caller id Sullivan, I pick the call

“ Sullivan...”

“ Vinci what's wrong, why is your phone switch off” Sullivan asked and I sigh

“ This is Swan not Vinci”

“ Swan what's wrong??? Where's Vinci??” He asked

“ Under my father captive”

“ So fast, sh**t he's so desperate” Sullivan said and I chuckled

“ Do you need anything?”

“ Haeun, she have been crying since yesterday night, she refuse to eat” Sullivan said and I sit upright immediately

“ I'm coming over, send the address”

“ I think she miss Vinci” Sullivan said

“ Don't worry I will handle it, just send the address”

He cut the call and I hop off the bed, I enter the washroom and have a quick bath

After bathing, I wear a black fitted skirt with a white top, I wear a black coat with a black heels, I take my brown bag and hung it on my neck

Cash, I open my drawer and saw four bundle of cash and my card, I pack everything inside the brown bag

I take the phone and put it inside the bag then walk out, the house is kinda quiet, I lock my room door and drop the key in my purse

First I need to see Yiga, I climb the stairs and when I reach downstairs someone cross my way immediately

“ Crazy bitçh” Juran cursed and I glance around to see some maids staring at us

“ Is this why you're crossing my way”

“ Look she's now talking back at me after shunning my greetings” Juran said as she raise her hand and I grab it then twist her wrist

“ How dare you raise your hand to slap me after all what you have done to me”

“ Huh!!! What are you saying” Juran said as she wince in pain

“ Story for another day, you're not my main target” I said as I let go of her hand

I was about to walk away when she pull my hand, I bite her hand and she let go of my hair and immediately I grab her hair pulling it hard

“ Why are you so stubborn and jobless huh!!”

I hit her face hard and she screamed, “ Hey Swan”

“ You're not my main target but it look like I will add you to the target list” I said and push her away then walk out of the house

I walk over to the other building and went straight to Yiga's room

When I reach her room door, I gently knock on it and I heard her voice

“ A minute”

The door open revealing her face and I smiled, she rolled her eyeballs and walk away, I enter her room then close the door

“ You shunned me so now what do you want” She said

“ You are mad at me, I know that”

“ So now what do you want?” she asked

“ Phone and car key”

She open her drawer and bring out the car key and phone, she drop it on my palm and I smiled

“ Dress up we're going out”

“ To where??” She asked

“ I wanna show you something”

“ What do you wanna show me?” she asked and I sit on her bed

“ Dress up”

I watch as she dress up, she wear a black trouser with a white hoodie, I take the bottle water that's on the table and hold it firmly

“ Swan is the dress okay??”

“ Let's go ” I replied and walk out of the room

She followed me immediately, we walk out of the building and walk over to the third building

I saw some guards in front of the door and they bow when they notice my presence

“ Good morning ma'am?”

“ Is my Dad inside?” I asked and they glance at each other

“ No ma'am”

“ I wanna go in” I said

“ He said no one should come in” one of the men said

“ Yiga order a new card, I want it right now”

“ Yes ma'am” Yiga said and I open my bag and bring out two bundle of cash

“ Take this and keep your mouth shut” I said and enter the room with Yiga

I saw Vinci tied with chain as five men stand in the corner of the room staring at him

“ Young Lady”

I bring out a bundle of cash and give it to one of the men

“ Keep your mouth shut”

“ My blood is running through your veins” Vinci said and I chuckled

I rush to his side and hug him tightly, he kiss my cheek and I smiled

“ Your face is battered”

“ Work harder if you don't want to see more bruise on my cute face” he said and I nod

I open the bottle water and he gulp everything down, he drank the whole water and I kiss his lip deeply

“ I love you” he muttered and I smiled

“ I love you more than you do”

“ Oh Yiga is here” Vinci said and Yiga just stare at us looking dumbfounded

“ This is a dream right??” Yiga said and Vinci chuckled

“ This reality, Yiga I want you to be honest towards her like you used to do, she needs your support right now” Vinci said and Yiga glance at me

“ Wait what you said was real right??” Yiga asked and I nod

“ Swan give her some time to get over the shock” Vinci said and I nod

“ I'm going over to see Sullivan

Advertisement

Haeun is having difficulty in sleeping”

“ Take care of her and her brother” he said and I nod, I hug him again and he kiss my neck

“ I will come and see you”

“ Stay safe” he said

“ Don't hit him again ” I said

“ Your Dad”

“ Follow his order only when he's here but if he's not here follow my order” I said and wave at him before walking out

“ Swan the car is here, I order the car from a nearby car store”
Yiga said

“ Great let's go”

“ Why are you changing your car?” She asked

“ I don't trust that car, there might be tracker on the car” I replied as we reach the gate and gateman open the gate

We step out and I saw a black car, the car door open and a man get down from the car

“ Yiga settle him” I said as I open my brown bag and bring out my card, I give the card then snatch the key from the man

“ Thank you”

I enter the car and wear my seatbelt then wait for Yiga, I watch as she bow at the man then enter the car

She ignite the car and start driving, I bring out Vinci's phone and call out the address

“ I need to get some toys and candies” I said and she glance at me

“ Don't give me that look, it's not for me”

“ It's for who??” she asked

“ My daughter”

“ Wait Swan you have a daughter and I don't know about it”
She said and I chuckled

“ You will know everything when we get there”

She slowly park the car and I get down from the car then enter the house

I was welcome with a loud cry, I saw Sullivan carrying Haeun as she cry loud

“ You're really serious about what you said”

He glance at me and smiled “ See Swan is here” He said and she glance at me

She stop crying and I walk over to Sullivan side and carry her

“ You're beautiful so don't cry” she giggled and I smiled

Yiga enter the house and glance at Sullivan then glance at me

“ Swan is that your daughter?” Yiga asked and Sullivan chuckled

“ Why is she doing like a ghost” Sullivan said amidst his laugh

“ Hey kiddo have some respect for me” Yiga said

“ Maybe in the next world” Sullivan said and walk away

I gently sit on the couch and Haeun rest her head on my Boobs
as her touch my other Boobs

“ Yiga the candies and chocolate”

She hastily drop the bag on the couch close to me glancing
around and I open the bag

I bring out the chocolate and open it, I put the chocolate in her
hand and watch as she suck it

“ Cutie...”

“ Swan you're here” I heard a familiar voice and my eyes to the
staircase, I saw Garam rushing down the stairs and hug me
tightly

“ Garam the baby”

“ Oh sorry” she muttered and move away

“ How's everything?? Are you not suppose to be at home?”

“ Today is my off day,,, how's Vinci?” she asked and I sigh

“ His face is battered”

“ He's gonna be fine so now I want you to play your card well”
Garam said and I nod

“ What are you guys talking about??” Yiga asked as she glance
at me then glance at Garam

“ Swan who's she??” Garam asked

“ My personal assistant and personal maid, she's different from
those vipers so you can trust her”

“ Does Vinci about this?” Garam asked

“ He knows about it, I'm keeping her close cause I'm gonna
need her later”

“ Need me for what?” Yiga asked

“ We will need to get justice for Chaewon” Garam replied

“ Sorry who's Chaewon?” Yiga asked and Garam glance at me

“ Update her” I said and stood

I carry Haeun and open the door and finally I found the kitchen,
I saw Sullivan washing his hands

My eyes move to the table and saw some ingredients

“ Sullivan.....”

“ Do you need anything?” he asked

“ Not really, I just wanna ask if she have eaten”

“ I told you she's rejecting every food I give her” Sullivan said
and I glance at Haeun who's head on my Boobs licking the
chocolate, her hand is stained with chocolate

“ She's okay now”

“ I know she's gonna be fine when she see you or Vinci that's why I asked you to come over” Sullivan said and I smiled

“ Anything she's crying just call me on video call”

“ Noted ,,,,”

A phone start ringing and Sullivan glance at me, I open my bag with my other hand and bring out Vinci's phone

Not that one

I return his phone inside the bag and bring out my phone and check the caller id, “ Beaver”, I pick the call

“ Swan...” I heard her low voice and scoff

“ Why are you calling me?”

“ Why are you sounding like this, are we fighting or what” she said

“ No we're not fighting, I'm just curious to know why you're calling me”

“ I heard that monster have released, are you okay?? Hope he did not traumatize you??”

Acting like she care about me, why is fake love everywhere

“ What do you wanna say??”

“ If you are not too stressed out, I want us to meet” she said and I glance at Sullivan who's busy cooking

“ To do what??”

“ To talk, I need you to help me out with my career” she replied and I scoff

“ Where should we need?”

“ Come to my manager house, I will send you the address” she said and I cut the call

“ Who was that??” Sullivan asked

“ Beaver, she wants me to help with her career”

“ Don't help her Instead let her know that she can't use and dump you anytime she like” Sullivan said

“ What do you mean??”

“ Her career is over, she's a bully and her bully video is all over the internet, they're planning to sue to her but her entertainment is denying the accusation so right now I guess she wanna use you to cover up her evil deeds” Sullivan said and I nod

“ I will turn her crisis into an opportunity for me”

“ Bingo, deal with her in front of the paparazzi” Sullivan said

“ But I don't have any evidence”

“ Trust me everything is ready, I will be waiting for you to pull the trigger” he said and I smiled

My phone made a sound and I check it, a message from Beaver

I open the phone and check the message, I saw the address and glance at him

“ Sullivan I'm coming let me go and see her, I will be back soon”
I said as I rush out of the kitchen with Haeun

I gently drop her on tiles and drop the toys and candies in front of her

“ Are you guys done with your story??”

“ Not yet” Yiga replied

“ I'm going out and I will be back shortly, Yiga let's go” I said
and walk out of the house

She followed me “ Where are we going to??” she asked

“ Beaver wanna see me”

“ So are you gonna act nice to her?” She asked and I glance at her

“ No I wanna turn her crisis into an opportunity for me”

She unlock the car doors and I enter the front seat then put on my seatbelt

She enter the car and ignite the engine, she slowly drive out of the compound

“ What's going through your head?” Yiga asked and I glance at her

“ How should I put it”

“ Put it anyhow” she said

“ Revenge, I'm gonna end those vipers and I'm gonna start from Beaver tho she's not the person I wish to start from”

“ Who do you wanna start from??” she asked

“ Choi Jin” I replied

Soon we arrive at her Mansion, she park the car in the parking lot and we get down from the car

“ Damn this car is good” Yiga said and I chuckled

“ I will get you a new car”

“ Really??” she asked squealing happily

“ I'm a lady of my word ”

I press the door bell and the door open, we enter the house and saw Beaver sitted on the couch

There's a table in front of her and on the table there's a bottle of wine with two glass cup

“ Beaver....”

“ Swan,,,, Oh you're here with your assistant” Beaver said as her smile slowly fade away to sad face and I sit on the couch while Yiga stand behind me

“ What do you want??”

“ There's a rumour going on about me and it's not true so I need to help me out” she said lowly

“ Why should I help you out, just assume I'm dead who's gonna clean up your mess”

“ Huh!!”

“ Stop acting innocent cause I'm tired of it, I know you sent him to kill me and now you have the gut to call my name”

“ Swan what are you saying?? Who's feeding you with those lies” she said and I scoff

“ This Swan you're seeing is a new version and about your career, prepare a press conference tomorrow morning by 7am”

“ Thank you”

I take the wine bottle and smash it on the table, “ This is how I'm gonna smash the internet tomorrow”

“ Huh!! What have come over you” she said and I chuckled

“ Drop the pretense”

The smile on her face slowly fade away and she smirk at me

“ You're pretty smart, I wonder what lies those animals have feed to you” She said and I laughed like a lunatic

“ They all made me understand that there's no one to trust in this world”

“ Do the press conference very well and clean this mess” she said coldly

“ Yes ma'am and I also have a little gift for you tomorrow at the conference”

“ Huh!!”

I take the broken bottle and move closer to her, she scoff and I smirk

“ I really wish to kill you right now but that will make me a devil which means there will be no difference between the both of us” I whispered and she laughed

“ That darn assassin made a mistake or should I made a mistake by sending an assassin to kill you when I should have end your life since by myself” she whispered and I tuck her hair behind her face

“ What about I give you a little scar so whenever you see it you will remember me, you will remember what you did to your dear friend who love you genuinely”

I pull her closer and I could see that fear in her eyes, I move the broken bottle to her face then trail it down her chin

“ Sweet revenge” I muttered and slash her cheek with the broken bottle

Thick blood slowly roll down her cheek and I laughed, she breathe out and fear already cover her face

“ This is just a tip, expect more and the conference tomorrow morning by 7am, send the address to me”

TBC

29

I walk out of the house and I could hear Yiga clapping as she laugh

“ That was awesome, I love this new Swan” she said and I chuckled

“ Stop pulling my leg”

She unlock the car door and I enter the car then wear my seatbelt

“ So where are we going to??” She asked and I glance at her

“ Always law firm”

“ Are you going there to threaten him?” Yiga asked and I twitch my lip

“ I have something to tell him”

“ Swan I don't know what's going through your head but I will support you, don't think I'm doing this cause I like you, I'm doing all this for the baby” Yiga said and I chuckled

She ignite the car engine and drive out of the building “ You're bad at lying but it's cute”

“ Don't give me that seductive smile I'm not into girls” Yiga said

“ I'm not a lesbian too”

“ Liar, I don't trust you” she said and I chuckled

My hand move to my tummy and I gently rub it smiling, the baby, I'm gonna do everything within my power to protect the fetus

“ You look happy” I heard her voice then glance at her

“ Actually,,,,,,,,I'm happy I'm carrying his child, I'm happy he's my man and no one else”

“ What are you gonna do about Aldo??” Yiga asked

“ End things with him but I'm gonna ruin him first before ending things with him”

“ How are you gonna do that??” She asked

“ Sullivan will help me out”

“ Oh that smarty pant” Yiga said and I chuckled

“ You don't like him??”

“ He's too smart for my liking, I hate genius guys” She said

“ So you like a dullard”

“ Forget it if you don't get what I mean” She said and I smiled

She slowly park the car in front of the law firm and I get down from the car

I enter the law firm with Yiga and I could feel that alluring stares

“ Where's his office??”

“ We're taking the elevator” Yiga replied and I nod

The security guard stopped us and I raise my eyebrow then glance at Yiga

“ Ma'am do you have an appointment with him??” The security guard asked and I scoff

“ Are you new here?”

“ Yes ma'am” he replied and bow

“ It's obvious”

“ Ma'am you can't enter” He said and I just nod

“ Yiga do your job”

She snatch his id card and use it to unlock the glass door, the door slowly open and I enter then walk away

“ Thanks for this” Yiga said as she throw the card on his face and hastily enter before the glass door close

We head over to the elevator and she press the button, the door slowly open and we saw some workers in the elevator

“ Oh my goodness it's Swan”

“ She look radiant and different”

“ My type”

“ I heard the governor have rescue his daughter from that dangerous assassin”

“ Stupid, it's real, this is her here”

“ Damn she's beautiful”

We enter the elevator and Yiga press a button, the elevator door slowly close

I watch as the number slowly read and I could feel their eyes on me

“ Why are you all staring at her as if she's a candy” Yiga said and they all look away

“ Yiga let them stare at me, it's fine” I said smiling and Yiga nod

The elevator door open and we step out, we head over to his office

We reach a particular glass door and Yiga slowly knock on it, “ Come in” I heard a familiar voice

“ Are you expecting someone?” I heard another familiar voice and push the glass door

I enter his office and met him sitted on the sofa with Assemblyman Lee

“ Kim Swan” Choi Jin called and I enter the office fully and sit on the sofa close to Lee

“ Choi Jin”

“ Kim Swan” Lee called and I keep my face straight

“ So you're here, I thought you are dead already” I said as I glance at Lee and Yiga chuckled

“ Did you just laugh??” Choi Jin said and Yiga look away

“ Do you wanna hit her like you did to my friend Chaewon”

“ I will pretend I did not hear that” Lee said

“ Better don't pretend instead prepare for your doom”

“ I guess the governor did not train you well” Jin said and I chuckled

“ Are you expecting me to receive an adequate training from a pedophile oh geez you are so funny”

“ Gibberish....” Lée said and I move closer to him

“ Did you just say gibberish”

“ You're mentally sick, David Kim need to send you to a better hospital” Lee said and I rest my leg on him then pull his head closer and bring my lip close to his ear

“ How are you gonna feel if I tell those hungry guys to rape your daughter gruesomely till she run out breathe”

“ Are you threatening me” He said as he wear a stern face and I chuckled

“ It's a warning”

“ You're playing with fire so get ready to lose your two precious hands” Lee said

“ My hands are gone so you can't shake my world, just get ready I'm gonna dig a two hole for the both of us”

“ Your pretty legs is gonna fill those two holes” Lee said and I smirk

“ You're going down together with that Old man that look like amoeba” I said aloud and Yiga chuckled

“ Swan where's your respect??! Drop your leg down” Choi Jin said and I laughed

“ Sorry I forgot my respect at home and about my leg, stop acting like a saint or is my leg tempting you, are you horny already or wait don't tell me you have release your useless sperm on your darn body”

“ Swan,,,,,” Jin growled and I laughed

“ Stop screaming like a lunatic”

“ You're a wasted sperm” Lee said and I glance at him then glance at Yiga

“ Who's talking??. Hey refer that statement to your daughter at home”

“ Swan where are your manners??” Jin said coldly and I laughed

“ Drop the coldness cause it doesn't suit you and I think already told you that I forgot my manners at home”

“ Jin throw her outside” Lee said and I stood

“ Touch me and die”

I watch as Choi Jin make a phone call through the landline

“ Come and throw her out like a trash” Jin said as he end the call

“ For this, I'm gonna double my steps”

The door open and I saw five guards, I glance at Choi Jin then glance at Assemblyman Lee

“ Your guards are yuck, my man is way more cooler than them”

I walk out of his office with Yiga and the guards follow me

“ Don't follow me like a bee cause you all are blind to see the truth since they have use money to deceive you all” I said aloud and I could see the employees staring at me

Yiga rush forward and press the elevator button, the door open and we enter the elevator

The door slowly close and I sigh, my body suddenly become weak and I fall on the elevator floor

“ Swan....” Yiga called as she hold me tightly

“ My body is weak”

“ You did a great job, I was not expecting that fierceness from you” Yiga said and I hug her

“ Don't break down here” She said and I hold her hand firmly as I stand

The elevator door open and I breathe out before stepping out, we walk out of the building and I enter the car

I wear my seatbelt and cover my face with my palm as a lot of things start running through my head

“ Where are we going to??” Yiga asked

“ Sullivan....”

I sob silently with my hands on my face, Swan you did well, you can do it, you're gonna do better

We arrive at the house and I get down from the car then enter the house

There I met Sullivan eyes glued to the TV screen and Garam sit next to him as she press her phone

“ I'm back”

“ How was it?” Garam asked

“ She's a savage queen, she deserve an accolade for her fierceness” Yiga said and I take off my heels

“ Sullivan we need to talk”

I walk away heading to the stairs, I was about to open a room door when someone closed it, I tilt my neck to see Sullivan

“ This is my room” He said and I hastily remove hand away from the door

“ Oh sorry”

“ That's his room” He said as he point at the other door, there's a room separating Sullivan's room from Vinci's room

I enter his room with Sullivan as he close the door and I gently lay on the bed and exhale loudly

“ You're tired?” He asked and I nod

“ Can I stay here to rest?”

“ Sure why not” he replied and I nod

I sit upright and take off my coat, I rest my head back on the pillow and glance at Sullivan only to see him sitted on the bed

“ Can you help me out with something?”

“ Sure name it” He said

“ I need a shocking evidence about Aldo, a genuine evidence that's gonna people to hate him”

“ Swan I get your point, give some time to work on it, I will send everything to you tomorrow” Sullivan said and I nod

“ Thank you”

“ You welcome, I'm doing my job” He said

“ Job??”

“ Vinci begged me to take good care of you so now I'm gonna do that” He replied and I smiled

“ He's so sweet”

“ Should I bring your food?” He asked

“ I need to sleep but that will be later, bring the food”

He step out of the room and soon he came back with a tray of food, he drop the tray on the bed and I dig the food

After eating

I drink water and rest my head back on the pillow

“ Thanks for the meal”

“ Rest very well and don't think about anything cause everything is gonna be fine” Sullivan said and I nod

I clutch onto the duvet and close my eyes, I close my eyes and sleep soundly

“ Juran don't try it”

“ Please don't shoot him”

“ Let me take the bullet”

“ Vinci nooo” Swan screamed as hot tears roll down her cheek, she slowly open her eyes and find herself in his room

“ It's just a dream” She muttered as she sob loudly

“ Vinci, I don't wanna lose him, can't bare that pain not anymore” She muttered as she lift her knee to her chest and rest her head on her kneecap

“ Swan it's just a dream, he's not gonna die” She muttered as she slowly stroke her hair

The room door suddenly open and she divert her eyes to the door only to see Sullivan

“ Are you okay??? I heard you screaming??” Sullivan asked and she just nod

“ I had a bad dream about Vinci”

“ Swan he's gonna be fine, it's just a dream” Sullivan said and she nod

“ Are you done with the research about Aldo?” Swan asked

“ I found something very interesting” Sullivan replied

“ What's the thing??”

“ There's a rumour going on about Aldo and Beaver” Sullivan said

“ What's the rumor all about??”

“ They are suspecting that Aldo is cheating on you with Beaver but there's no evidence to prove it but I have some evidences to prove it” Sullivan replied

“ What's the evidence??”

“ While you were asleep, I did a little research by going through Beaver personal Instagram account and I saw something pleasing, a video of her having fun in the club house and in the video Aldo back view mistakenly appear” Sullivan said

“ I look through the comment section and someone drop the club address and name so I went there and collect the evidence, you know each VIP rooms in a club house have CCTV so that was how I was able to obtain the evidence” Sullivan added and Swan widened her eyes

“ Why are you a genius?”

“ Someone is gonna like me like that” Sullivan said as he smiled

“ Someone is already hating you” Swan said as she shake her head

“ Who??”

“ That's a secret, don't forget to send the evidence” Swan said as she hop off the bed and take her bag and coat then walk out of the room smiling leaving Sullivan alone

She went downstairs and saw Garam and Yiga laughing as their lip moves

“ Yiga let's go” Swan said and they glance at her

“ Finally you're awake” Yiga said

“ Sleeping beauty, this pregnancy is really making you weak” Garam said and Swan chuckled

“ I can't believe I slept for long, time fly so fast”

“ Garam we're gonna continue this tomorrow” Yiga said

“ I'm going to work tomorrow” Garam said lowly and Yiga nod as she stood

“ Maybe some other time” Yiga muttered and walk out

“ We will talk later, if Haeun is crying just do a video call with me” Swan said and Garam smiled

She walk out of the house and enter the car, she drop her coat and bag on her thighs as she wear her seatbelt

Yiga ignite the car engine and slowly drive out “ She's fun to be with” Yiga muttered and Swan glance at her

“ Have she tell you full story?”

“ Yes, geez Karina and your father deserve a beating” Yiga replied

“ I know that, she's gonna pay for her sins, her children are not excluded”

“ Wait you are gonna punish Ethel too?” Yiga asked and Swan nod

“ He's a snake under the green grass so he deserve a punishment too”

Swan bring out her phone and saw 20 missed calls from the governor, 10 missed calls from Aldo and 5 missed calls from Juran

“ My phone is gonna explode with this 35 missed calls”

“ From who?” Yiga asked

“ 20 from Dad, 10 from Aldo and 5 from Juran” she replied and Yiga chuckled

“ Now I believe fake love truly exist” Yiga muttered and Swan smiled

Shortly they arrive at the gate“ Yiga don't park the car here”

“ Why??” she asked

“ I don't want them to see it so just park it outside”

“ Swan is it gonna be safe?” Yiga asked

“ This is an estate, an executive estate so it's gonna be safe”
Swan replied and Yiga gently park the car at the other side, not far from the governor's Mansion

They get down from the car and walk over to the gate, Yiga press the door bell and no sooner the gate open

Swan enter the Mansion and Yiga followed her behind as she lock the gate

“ I promise to get him a good meal but I arrive home late”

“ Everywhere is dark already and you can still give him the meal” Yiga said and Swan exhale loudly

“ You're gonna stay in my room tonight”

“ And you're sleeping on the floor” Yiga said and Swan chuckled

“ Pity the innocent child cause I know you don't like me” Swan said and Yiga chuckled

“ Just kidding”

“ We staying on the bed together”

Swan open the door and saw Karina, she enter the house fully with Yiga

“ Where were you, why are you not picking your calls, we're worried about you” Karina said as she rush her words and Swan scoff

“ We, did you just say We, hey speak for yourself”

“ Hey where's your manners” Ethel said and Swan tilt her neck to see him on the dining table

“ Shut up it's not yet your time to talk” Swan said

“ Swan watch your tongue he's your elder brother” Dad said and I scoff

“ Why will an illegitimate child be my brother”

“ Sweetheart let me handle it from here” Karina said and Swan glance at Juran then Ethel

“ Why are you all questioning me, I'm an adult so give me my freedom”

“ We don't want you to get kidnapped” Juran said and I chuckled

“ Why are you worried??? Even tho I'm here, I'm still gonna get kidnapped”

“ Mom let's eat” Ethel said and Karina walk away heading to the dining table

“ Ma'am are you ready to eat??” the maid asked and I glance at Yiga

“ Pack it in a tray” Swan replied and the maid walk away, soon she came back with a try of food

“ Yiga let's go”

“ To where??” Karina asked and Swan scoff

“ That's none of your business”

“ Swan behave well” Governor said sternly and Swan rolled her eyeballs

“ I'm going to Yiga's room, I can't stand this hateful glares”

“ Prepare for the breakfast, tomorrow morning by 7am you must be in dining table” Dad said and Swan walk out of the house with Yiga

“ How I'm I gonna do it?” Swan asked as soon as she step out

“ You can use 30 minutes to call off the engagement then use 10 minutes for the ride” Yiga replied

“ Another smarty pant, let's go to give him his meal and spend some time with him” Swan said and walk away

Yiga smiled and followed her, she collect the tray from Swan and hasten her step

Swan *** pov ***

The next morning I wear an armless black baggy jumpsuit with a transparent heels, I let my hair flow freely as I get ready for the darn breakfast

I sit on the stool in front of the mirror and apply a little make-up on my face as I humm a song silently

My phone start ringing and I stretch my hand and take my bag, I open my bag and bring out the two phones

A video call on Vinci's phone, I pick the call and Sullivan face show up on the screen

“ Hey what's wrong??”

“ Haeun, she's crying again” Sullivan replied and I smiled

“ Let me see her face”

Sullivan move the camera to her face and I could see her crying as she pout her lip sweetly

“ Haeun see Swan” Sullivan said and I could see her hand on the screen

“ Baby why are you crying”

I smiled and she keep tapping the screen, I suddenly see her lip on the screen

“ Haeun this is not a candy” I heard Sullivan voice and I laughed

She giggled as she smile brightly pointing at something, I tilt my neck to see Yiga at my back

“ Where's that smarty pant” Yiga said and Sullivan face appear on the screen immediately

“ Hey my name is Sullivan not smarty pant” Sullivan said and I chuckled

“ I hate genius guys like you” Yiga said

“ I also hate blunt and ugly girls like you” Sullivan said and I laughed, I heard Haeun giggling and I laughed

“ Hey I'm beautiful than your sister” Yiga said

Sullivan scoff “ Wildest dream, Thelma is a hot fashionista that controlling the fashion industry right now in America” Sullivan said and Yiga glared at him

“ Send the evidence” I said and he nod

“ Swerz I hate you” Yiga said

“ Who cares, f**k off” Sullivan said as he end the call and Yiga screamed feeling frustrated

“ Woah this is crazy”

The phone made a sound and I check it to see a message from Sullivan

I check the message and saw three videos and ten pictures

“ Exactly what I need, Yiga let's go for the breakfast” I said as I stand and carry my bag and walk out of the room

I adjust my ring properly and smile, I get down from the stairs and I could see everyone

“ Good morning” I greeted as I bow

Aldo's family smiled at me and I smiled, I walk over to the dining table and the maid drag out a chair and I sit on it

“ Sorry for taking long”

“ No it's fine” Aldo's father said and I nod

“ Our soon-to-be bride” Aldo's sister said

“ I can't wait to have her in our family” Aldo's Mom said and I chuckled

“ But unfortunately I don't wish to be in your family”

“ Swan what are you saying” Dad said and I glance at him

“ Why are you guys treating like me like a trash”

“ Swan...” Karina said and I stand

“ Are you all expecting me to marry a cheater, someone that wants me dead by sending an assassin to kill me”

“ Swan what are you saying, sit down sweetie” Aldo's Mom said and I scoff

“ I'm sick of this, I can't stand it anymore” I said as I bring out the phone and play the video

Their eyes glue to the screen and I play his sex tape with Beaver

“ This is a wonderful make out session”

I play the second video and I widened my eyes when I saw Juran in the video, I quickly cover it with a smile

“ You all want me to marry this cheater that's screwing Juran in an intense doggy style, oh sh**t”

“ Swan turn off the video” Juran shouted!! and I laughed

“ Are you scared?? You better don't be cause this is just the beginning”

“ S...Sw.....Swa.....Swan” Aldo stuttered

“ I'm calling off my engagement, I don't love Aldo anymore cause right now my heart is beating for someone else”

“ Swan don't do this, I'm a changed man now” Aldo as

“ A cheater will always be a cheater” I said and glance at Juran, I could see her glaring at me

I move away from the table and walk over to her side, I grab her hair tightly and hit her face on the plate of food that's in front of her

“ Don't you ever glare at me with those disgusting eyes”

“ Swan....” Ethel yelled! And I scoff rolling my eyeballs

“ Shut up I never asked you to talk and moreover your mouth stink a lot so scram”

TBC

30

Garam pov

I get down from the car and saw Eric coming out from the hospital, I rush to his side and he smiled when he notice my presence

“ Where are you going to?”

“ Home,,,,,” he replied

“ So fast”

“ Have you forgotten I'm doing night duty for two weeks, this is the second week” Eric said and I flip my eyelashes multiple times

“ Oh right”

“ Are you okay?” He asked and I nod

“ I thought something was wrong”

“ Everything is fine,,,,,we can have a quick discussion in the car?” He asked and I nod

We walk over to the car and he press a button on the key, the car door unlocked and we enter the back seat

I drop my bag on my thigh as I take my lip in avoiding his gaze

“ Are you avoiding eyes contact with me” I heard his voice and chuckled

He rest his hand on my hand and I felt something like an electric shock

“ Few minutes ago you were worried about me and now you're avoiding eyes contact with me, are you planning to turn me down” Eric said

“ No it's not what you are thinking” I said rushing my words and he smiled

“ you're cute” He muttered

He smiled and I chuckled, he hold my chin as he kiss the side of my lip before moving his lip to my lip

“ Mmm Eric”

“ I will take that as a yes” He as he deepen the kiss, devouring my lip in a passionate

He break the kiss and kiss forehead smiling, “ The lunch you had in my house was crazy”

“ Really crazy, we keep bumping into each other and the hot intension was something” He added and I laughed

“ So till,,,,,”

“ Forever, our meeting is not gonna have an ending” he whispered and bring his face closer

“ The window”

“ The glass is tinted so let's spend some time alone” Eric said
and I could feel cheek burning

“ We're in the hospital and I need to get to work”

“ Ditch it” He said and I chuckled

“ I'm an intern”

“ Okay spend just 30 minutes with me” He said and I look away

“ Let me think about it”

He pull me closer and I rest my head on his broad chest and his
hand wrapped firmly round my body

“ Let's enjoy this moment” Eric said lowly

“ Just for thirty minutes”

“ Don't you wanna stay with me?” He asked and I glance at him

“ Eric I wish too but.....”

“ Don't be scared, nothing is gonna happen, I will cover up for you” He said and I smiled

Swan pov

“ Hey bitçh” Juran screamed and I tightened my grip, her cheek gum to the plate of food and I glance at everyone

“ You're a lunatic and you don't deserve to be here” Karina said lowly and I scoff

“ A betrayer is not allowed to talk when I'm talking”

“ Swan what have come over you” Dad said and I scoff

“ You're not qualified to talk too so all of you scram” I shouted!
As I move away from Juran and walk out of house with Yiga

I glance at the other building and take my lip in flipping my hair backward

“ Yiga I have ruin things”

“ Don't sound like that, you're sounding as if you're losing” Yiga said and I cover my face with my palm

“ I hope I pull this properly” I muttered as I walk away heading to the gate

The security man open the gate and we step out of the Mansion, we head over to the car and enter it

“ Yiga is it possible to turn those videos and pictures into a USB file?” I asked as I wear my seatbelt

“ Do you have SD card?” She asked and I slowly tilt my neck

“ Not sure”

“ We need that smarty pant” Yiga said and I nod

I hastily bring out the phone and dial his line, he pick the call immediately

“ Swan anything??”

“ Engagement is over but right now I need your help” I replied

“ What do you want me to do??”

“ Come over to MT ENTERTAINMENT” I replied

“ Is that all?” he asked

“ No, I want you to convert those evidences into a USB file”

“ Consider it done, you're gonna meet me there” He said and I cut the call

“ What's his reply?” Yiga asked

“ He's coming over”

“ This is really gonna be epic” She said and I glance at her

“ You happy??”

“ Why not, I'm happy the secret is revealing little by little” She replied and I smiled

“ I thought you are gonna betray me like them”

“ Swan I'm different from them, I gat you” Yiga said and I chuckled

“ I really can't wait to see their reaction when I show the world the video”

“ Swrz I can't wait to curse Beaver, that bitçh deserve what's coming” She said and I look away facing the window

“ I miss him”

“ You mean Shadow??” Yiga asked and I nod

“ I miss him, I miss his kiss, I miss his laugh

Advertisement

I miss his touch, I just miss everything about him”

“ He's yours forever so you don't have to miss him” Yiga said and I glance at her

“ You're right”

“ What are you gonna do with him once everything is over?” She asked and I twitch my lip

“ Go on a vacation to Hawaii”

“ Hey that's off point” Yiga said and I glared at her playfully

“ Our taste is different” I said and she snuck at me

She park the car in front of the entertainment and I could some paparazzi outside

“ Swan can you pull this off?” Yiga asked

“ I can pull it off” I replied as I get down from the car and immediately paparazzi surround me like a bee

“ Swan are you here for the press conference??”

“ Do you have anything to say about the rumours that's going on”

“ Kim Swan say something”

“ Are you here to clear off the rumour”

“ I'm here to shake off the internet” I said and enter the entertainment with Yiga

“ We're taking the elevator” Yiga whispered and I nod

We walk over to the elevator side and she press a button, the elevator door slowly open and we enter the elevator and she press a button

The elevator door slowly close and I glance at her, she glance at me and our eyes locked

“ Is anything wrong??” She asked and I nod

“ No everything is fine”

I bring out my phone and dial his line, he pick the call immediately

“ Swan I'm on my way” Sullivan said

“ Please be fast, meet me in the conference room”

“ I will there soon” He said and I cut the call

“ Where's he??” Yiga asked

“ She's on her way”

“ I hope he make it here on time” She said and I nod

The elevator door and we step out, Yiga stayed at the front and I followed her behind

“ Swan....” I heard a familiar voice and stop walking

I tilt my heels turning around to see beaver's manager

“ Mia....”

“ We will like to have a little word with you” Mia said

“ Talk to me I'm her manager” Yiga said and Mia chuckled

“ I'm talking to your boss not you so stay out of the business”
Mia said

“ Spoilt brat are everywhere, I really need to tame this your
mouth that's running pretty fast like a cheetah” Yiga said

“ I just don't why you bring her here, she's a pain in the a\$”
Mia said

“ Clean your mouth and talk like a well trained lady”

“ She doesn't know the job of a manager” Yiga said and I walk
over to her side

“ Where's she??” I asked as I glance at the door she's standing next to it

“ She's in the room preparing herself” Mia replied and I rolled my eyeballs as I enter the room

There I saw her sitted in front of the mirror with the stylist adjusting get hair

“ Can you spare us a moment??”

Beaver glance at me and smiled “ Step out, I will call you when I'm done talking to her” She said and the stylist bow before walking out

I glance at the door then face her back, I walk over to her side and sit on the chair next to her

“ You wanna see me”

“ Are you happy that my face is ruined” Beaver said and I chuckled

“ I'm not happy yet, that injury is just a tip, more is coming soon so expect it”

“ Don't ruin the press conference, this conference is my only hope so do it well” She said and I scoff

“ Controlling me as if you own me”

“ And what if I know you, what are you gonna do about that??”
She said and I scoff

“ I'm gonna end the owner's life”

“ Your blood is really boiling” She said and I stood

“ Remember I said I have a little gift for you, I'm gonna give it to you in front of the paparazzi”

“ Can't wait to see the gift” Beaver said

“ You're definitely gonna love the gift”

I walk out of the room and saw Yiga, Haeun and Sullivan staring at Mia

“ Should we kill her” Sullivan said

“ Spare her life” I said and they all glance at me

“ Tell your boss to start the press conference right now”

I walk away to the window side and they followed me

“ The USB”

Sullivan dip his hand in his pocket and bring out a USB

“ How are we gonna connect it?” Yiga asked

“ A laptop and projector” Sullivan replied

“ Is there gonna be a projector in the conference room??” Yiga asked

“ There's always a projector in a conference room” Sullivan replied and I glance at Haeun

“ You bring her along”

“ Garam is at work and I can't leave her alone at home” Sullivan said and I sigh

“ I can leave if you're not comfortable” Sullivan said

“ No it's fine I'm just worried about what the paparazzi are gonna say but don't worry I will handle it well” I said and raise my head

I watch as Beaver enter the conference room looking remorseful

“ She look remorseful but her heart is the opposite” Sullivan said and I chuckled

“ Finally she's going down to the lowest level” Yiga said and I smiled

The conference room door open and we saw Mia, she point at me then tilt her neck

“ Swan it's time” Mia said and I nod

“ Let's go”

Sullivan drop Haeun on the floor and stand holding his leg for support, I gently hold her hand and she walk over to my side

We walk over to the door and enter the conference room, I could feel all attention on me

Haeun hold my hand tightly as we walk over to the podium while Sullivan and Yiga walk over to the control section

I stood in front of a table and on the table there's a mic on it

” I'm Kim Swan”

“ Swan who's she??”

“ Is she your child?”

“ Swan are you mother?”

“ Shocking news”

“ They look alike”

“ Swan is a mother”

“ Please say something”

The camera flash on my face and I sigh “ I have nothing to say about that”

“ So she's your daughter” a reporter said and I glance at Haeun who's clutching onto my dress tightly

“ You're gonna know very soon so why don't you calm down and let us focus on Beaver's issue”

“ Is the allegation true”

“ Is Beaver truly a bully cause we all know you guys have been friends for some years now”

“ Is your marriage with Aldo still gonna go on?”

“ Shed more light on the issue”

“ Before saying anything, I will like show you all some videos and pictures as an evidence”

I glance at Sullivan and he nod, I glance at the projector and I could see the video playing

Beaver sex tape with Aldo, the paparazzi murmur as they capture the video

“ That's not all, Sulli play the other video”

Sullivan play Juran and Aldo sex tape and wr heard a loud murmur from paparazzi

He play the last video, it's more like a voice record between her and a deep voice, I assume that should be Sullivan handiwork

“ Geez I can't believe she paid Shadow to kidnap Swan”

“ Someone should call the police”

“ She deserve a death penalty”

“ Darn she's a devil”

“ Her career is over”

“ This news is gonna trend”

I smiled in satisfaction as see Beaver reaction, this is the kind of look I wanna see on her face

Haeun hug my leg tightly and I stroke her hair, she glance at me and I smiled

“ Beaver this is my little gift please manage it cause I know it's too small” I said and she screamed

I could see her face boiling in anger and I smiled in satisfaction, Mia widened her eyes and mouth in bewilderment

“ My marriage with Aldo is over and my relationship with Beaver is over too, police arrest her for attempted murder, she's not the only one, her and Aldo planned it so include him too”

“ That man”

“ Why will he do that”

“ I need to capture this moment”

“ What a wicked world”

“ They're heartless”

“ She's lying, don't believe her” Beaver screamed and they all glance at her

“ Lying against you is pointless, this evidences have prove everything”

“ Shut up” Beaver growled and I laughed

She climb the podium and rush to my side then grab my hair

“ Momma” Haeun cried loud as she hit Beaver with her small hand and I wince in pain

“ You bastard stay aside” Beaver yelled! As she push Haeun, she fell on the floor and hit her head hard on the rug

“ Hey bitçh” I cursed as I bite her hand hard and she hastily remove her hand away from my hair

She wince in pain and was about to hit my face when I slap her hard

I slap her again and I heard a loud gasp “ How dare you touch my daughter, are you sick or something” I yelled and Yiga rush over to my side

She carry Haeun from the rug and bring her close to my side, I carry her Haeun and rub the back of her head

She sob on my shoulder and I shot Beaver a deadly glare

“ I can joke with everything in this world but not when it comes to my precious gem” I said as I step down from the podium and walk out of the conference room to carrying Haeun

“ Crazy, Swan is she truly your daughter”

“ They look alike”

“ There's a mother and daughter connection between them”

“ Swan we need an interview with you”

“ The baby is cute”

31

I walk out of the conference room with Haeun and the paparazzi followed me like a bee, Yiga open a door and I enter the room.

“ Haeun are you okay??” I asked with concern and she just stare at me without saying anything, I kiss her forehead and she stare at me without reacting to my touch.

I tilt my neck to see Sullivan and Yiga staring at me and I just exhale loudly

“ Why is she not talking, she's just staring at me without smiling”.

“ She's always quiet anytime she is in pain” Sullivan replied and I glance at Haeun.

She rest her head on my left boobs as her other hand rest on my right boobs, she bring her mouth closer to my left boobs as if she wanna suck it.

“ Do you need anything?” she flip her beautiful long eyelashes multiple times without saying anything.

“ When is she gonna talk?” Yiga asked and I glance at her.

“ When she's not longer feeling any pain” Sullivan replied and I take my lip in

I gently sit on the high chair resting my back properly.

“ Sullivan I.....”.

My mind came to my mind and I don't know when tears roll down my cheek.

“ Swan are you crying??” Yiga asked and I slowly touch my cheek to see it wet

“ What's wrong?” Sullivan asked.

“ I miss him, I just wanna end this revenge pretty so he can live a normal life, so he can connect with his daughter”.

“ Swan you don't need to cry cause I know everything is gonna be alright, you're doing pretty good and I'm so impressed with it” Yiga said.

“ You're done dealing with them so now why don't we focus on the upper hands” Sullivan said as he bring out his phone.

“ Who are the upper hands?” Yiga asked as she glance at him.

“ My Dad, the Assemblyman Lee, Senator Jung and Choi Jin”

“ How are we gonna deal with them?” Yiga asked.

“ Right now Swan is shaking the internet with her shocking speech, people are supporting her and I think their career is over now, they can't close the issue as nothing” Sullivan said and my phone suddenly start ringing and I open my bag and bring out.

A call from Karina, I picked the call.

“ Hey what's the meaning of that rubbish?” Karina shouted!, I remove the phone from my ear and exhale loudly, I return the phone back to my ear.

“ Can you talking without shouting cause I'm not deaf”

“ Swan you're crazy, I should have kill you long ago” she said.

“ That's the mistake you did”.

“ But now it's not too late” she said

“ Sorry to burst your bubble it's too late cause right now I'm immortal”.

“ I'm gonna turn you to mortal, you did a great job by revealing Juran's sex tape to the world” She said.

“ Thank you and know something, this is just the beginning of your doom and I know you killed my mother with your jealousy and evil tongue”.

She laughed “ You're gonna face your father wrath” she said.

“ Shut up” I cut the call and hold my phone tapping it on the table as I exhale loudly

“ Karina right??” Sullivan said.

“ I wanna crush her down”.

“ She's frustrating you” Yiga said and I nod

I felt a small hand touching my cheek and I glance down, Haeun hand is on my cheek and she stare at me without saying anything.

“ Are you still in pains?”

She smiled and I smiled at her “ Meem” she muttered.

“ What's she saying?”

“ She's calling you” Sullivan replied and I face her.

“ You're beautiful and I'm so happy to have you by my side”

She smiled and glance at Sullivan.

“ What's the next thing to do??”.

“ We need a relevant evidence from Karina's phone, arrest those betrayers and look for an undeniable evidence against Choi Jin”

“ A undeniable evidence against Choi Jin” Yiga said.

“ Swan should get the right word out of his mouth and after you are done with it, send it to me and give me four to five days to pile up the evidence and on the fifth day, the last day of the week, we're gonna reveal everything and save your charming prince” Sullivan said.

“ Why are you so smart” Yiga said

“ And why are you so dull” Sullivan replied and I chuckled.

“ Hey do you really have to insult me” Yiga said

“ Just shush, Swan let's go” Sullivan said and walk out.

Yiga did the middle finger sign at his back view and I laughed.

“ Perfect combo”.

We step out and luckily there's no paparazzi, we walk to the elevator and enter it

I carry Haeun properly and something cross my mind immediately.

“ Sullivan I think I need some little evidence about Choi Jin, I want Chaewon case evidence”.

“ Huh!!” he muttered.

“ That bastard won't talk unless I corner him with an evidence”
I said and they nod.

“ You're right, you know what, I will quickly rush home so I want you to use that opportunity to know his location and.....bond with Haeun” Sullivan trailed as he glance at Haeun.

“ I think Haeun like Swan” Yiga said.

“ Why are you slow-witted cause everyone already knows that fact” Sullivan said and Yiga glared at him.

“ What are you trying to say”.

“ Bond with her so she can be free with you so she can think you're her biological mother” Sullivan said and the elevator door open.

We step out and we saw no paparazzi, “ Meet us in the restaurant close to this entertainment”.

We step out of the building and I enter my car with Haeun and watch as he enter the car and drive away.

Yiga ignite the car engine and start driving heading straight to the restaurant

“ Swan how are you gonna get her phone??” Yiga asked and I sigh heavily.

“ Let's wait for that moment”.

Soon we arrive at the restaurant and enter, I could see some people glancing at me as they murmur some words .

“ They don't get tired of talking about people's life” Yiga muttered and I rolled my eyeballs

We walk over to the window side and sit on the chair that's there.

I gently drop Haeun on the table and she glance around clapping her hand

“ Do you need anything?” I asked and she face me.

“ Swan do you need anything?” Yiga asked

“ Bottle water”.

“ Waitress over here” Yiga said as she lift her hand and a lady come over to our side

“ Ma'am what will you like to order?” The lady asked .

“ Bottle water”.

“ Can I see your menu?” Yiga asked and the lady drop the menu on the table

Yiga access it then glance at me, she slowly twitch her lip then glance at the lady.

“ Just give me bottle water” Yiga said as she return the menu book to her and the lady walk away.

“ Why water?”.

“ The menu is something else” She replied and I nod as I face Haeun.

“ Why are you not talking?? Why are you silent?? You miss your daddy right??”

She slowly nod and look away “ You're gonna have a brother soon”.

She face me and smiled brightly, “ You're gonna see your daddy soon”

She smiled and I smiled, I tuck her hair behind her ear and caress her cheek.

The waitress came back with two bottle of water, she drop the bottle of water on the table and walk away.

I take the bottle water and open it then gulp a little quantity.

Haeun stare at me as I drink the water “ Is she thirsty too”, I stop drinking the water and gently put the bottle tip in her mouth

She slowly gulp the water down and I chuckled “ I don't know what to buy for you”

“ This restaurant is something else” Yiga said and I nod.

“ No snacks or cookies on the menu?”

“ There's nothing like that and I doubt if she. will be able to eat the food that's on the menu” She replied and I sigh.

Soon I heard the sound of the door and I tilt my neck to see Sullivan entering the restaurant holding a brown paper file.

He walk over to my side and sit next to Yiga, she glance at him then rolled her pretty eyeballs.

“ Sorry for taking long” Sullivan said

“ It's fine, just show me the evidences”.

“ There are two evidences, the Hansu bio and slushing of illegal fund and Chaewon case” Sullivan said.

“ Illegal fund??” Yiga asked and Sullivan nod

“ They are using Bam to do illegal fund” He replied.

“ That bastard” Yiga said as she scoff.

“ Vinci was working on this case and he plan on revealing it to the world, Assemblyman Lee is doing illegal fund and he's using Bam his assistant to do the fund” Sullivan said.

“ So I should use this to threaten him”.

“ Exactly, Swan I know you can get the right word out of his mouth” Sullivan said and I sigh

“ I can do it, I need to go now”.

“ Swan should I follow you?” Yiga asked and I glance at Sullivan then glance at Haeun

“ I will go with Sullivan, Yiga just go back to Vinci's Mansion with Haeun”.

“ Please be careful” Yiga said and I nod

“ Don't worry I will be fine, Sullivan let's go”

I take the file with my bag and walk out of the restaurant, Sullivan unlock the car door and I enter the car and he start driving.

“ Is it only Assemblyman that's doing the illegal fund for the campaign?”

“ He's not the only one, Senator Jung, Choi Jin and your Dad is involved in it” He replied.

“ How much??” .

“ 80 billion won” He replied and I open the file and go through the file and something caught my attention, I saw my name used in the bank transaction.

“ Sullivan my name” .

“ They are using your name to receive the illegal fund and your Dad doesn't know about it” He said.

“ Why are they using my name?”

“ They are using it against if problem arise” Sullivan replied.

“ They want me to take the fall”.

“ Exactly so use this point to corner him and about Chaewon check those papers you're gonna see her conversation with them” Sullivan said and my eyes roam through the papers and I saw the conversation where Choi Jin is threatening her.

“ Who's the father of the baby?”

“ Swan after her death, Vinci did a DNA test on the foetus and,,,,,,” He trailed.

“ And what?”.

“ 98.9% compatible” He replied

“ What are you trying to say?”.

“ Your father is the responsible for the pregnancy” He replied.

“ But they gang raped her”.

“ I was surprised too when I saw the DNA result” Sullivan said and I sigh.

“ Gosh sh**t I hate him”.

“ So handle it well, does your father knows that you are pregnant?” Sullivan asked and I nod

“ He's yet to know and the pregnancy is not obvious”.

“ I hope he doesn't know before we end this revenge” Sullivan muttered and I sigh

“ He's not gonna know, I will make sure he doesn't know about it” .

“ I hope you do a great job” He muttered

We arrive at the law firm and he park the car in front of the law firm.

I unbuckle the seat belt and was about to get down from the car when he held my hand

“ Not yet, you're gonna need this” He said as he let go of my hand and bring out a ear pod with a fountain pen.

“ What will I use it to do??”.

“ The fountain pen, you're gonna use it to record your conversation with him, don't worry it's connected to my phone and the ear pod, we're gonna use it to communicate” He replied.

“ Sullivan...”.

“ I don't trust that animal, I have to do this to keep you safe, If anything happens to you forget it Vinci is gonna kill me” He said and I smiled.

“ Thank you” I muttered and hug him

He stroke my hair gently and I chuckled, I take the fountain pen and hung it on my bag then wear the ear pod.

I use my hair to cover my left ear so the pod won't be visible

“ Thank you, I will be back shortly”

I get down from the car and enter the building holding my bag.

The security men rush to my side and I chuckled, I glance around and I could see the workers staring at me as they murmur

“ Why are you blocking my way??” I asked as I chuckled.

“ The boss said I should not let you in so please kindly leave”.

“ Choi Jin and his madness” I muttered

“ Ma'am leave before I throw you out like a trash”.

I bring out my phone and dial his line, he did not pick his call, I call him and he pick the call after some much hesitation.

“ Will you tell this ant to let me in”

“ Kim Swan” He called and I rolled my eyeballs

“ Hansu bio, illegal fund for the campaign under my name”.

“ What are you saying?” Jin asked and I smirk

“ Tell your weak boys to let me in or I will tell the world your dirty secret and trust me, I have a lot of evidence to pull you down and once I start, the word mercy will not longer be in my dictionary”.

“ Put the phone on speaker” He said and I smiled

I put the phone on speaker “ Let her in, you have my permission” He said and I cut the call.

“ Geez I pity you” I said and walk away, I walk over to the elevator side and enter the elevator

I open my bag and bring out the file and glance at the CCTV that's in the elevator.

“ Scumbag are not allowed to live a sweet life” I muttered.

The elevator door and I step out, I walk over to his office and enter without knocking

I saw Choi Jin, Assemblyman Lee and a lady, they all glance at me and I rolled my eyeballs.

“ Entering my office without knocking” Choi Jin said.

“ I forgot my manners at home and who's she?”

“ Why are you here” Choi Jin asked and I scoff.

“ Mr Lee am I now invisible” I said as I sit on the couch and rest my leg on his lap

“ Swan....” He called.

“ Sweetie”.

“ Are you done digging your two holes cause right now I'm impatient to drag you into two holes” He said and I smirk.

“ Not yet done with it”.

“ Swan you were saying something about Hansu bio” Jin said and I glance at Lee

I drop the file on his chest and watch as he open the file.

His eyes roam through the papers and he fold it gritting his teeth, he throw the papers on the floor and I laughed.

“ If you like burn the papers I don't f**ing care cause that's the photocopy, the original copy is with me”.

“ What do you want?” Lee asked and I glance at the lady.

“ Give me the 80 billion won and I will keep my mouth shut”

“ You wanna be greedy like your father” Choi Jin said.

“ Don't you know that he's greediness is running through my veins” .

“ Swan....” Lee called.

“ You opened the account in my name so don't you think I should have the full right over the money” .

“ Really??? I can't believe you're this stupid" Choi Jin said.

“ You killed Chaewon with her baby, you're slushing illegal fund and open a lot of accounts in my name, illegal money are entering that account and thank goodness I have a lot of evidence against you” .

“ What do you want again?” Assemblyman Lee asked.

“ Who killed Chaewon?”.

“ I killed her and I don't regret doing that, if she come back to this life, I will make sure I kill her over and over” Choi Jin said.

“ You're proud to be a murderer”.

“ She's too beautiful so we had a taste of her, she got pregnant and found out about our secret so she used it to threatened to me, that small spider is proving to be a boss when she's not up to my level” Assemblyman Lee said.

“ Swan you're too good" I heard Sullivan voice and smiled.

“ Your reason is pointless but know something, If you don't give me the 80 billion won trust me I'm gonna expose everything to the world” .

“ Will you be alive to expose it to the world” Choi Jin said.

“ Try to touch me and see if I won't ask those hungry lions to deal with your high school daughter, I'm sure she's gonna be sweet on the bed” I said and Choi Jin scoff.

“ I guess that bastard have tell you everything” Choi Jin said and I smiled.

“ The 80 billion or I reveal the secret, I'm gonna do it the exact way I did to Aldo, Juran and Beaver”.

“ So aren't you gonna arrest your sister too” Assemblyman Lee said

“ Stop meddling in my business and paddle your canoe”.

“ Do you know that I'm not gonna go down alone, I'm going down together with your father” Assemblyman Lee said and I nod.

“ I know that so thanks for reminding me”

“ Spoilt brat” The lady said and I glance at her.

“ Who just talked??”.

“ W....Wh....What” She stuttered as she scoff.

“ Don't let them use and discard you like a tissue cause this people are dangerous, they don't deserve live a sweet life” .

“ I'm gonna live a sweet life and you are gonna watch me do that or what about I have a taste of you”.

“ No one touch the lion's food and go scot-free” I said as I stand holding my bag.

“ What about I kill the lion” Lee said

“ I'm curious to know the lion” Choi Jin said and Lee laughed.

“ He's someone all of you are familiar with, touch me and you're gonna face his wrath” I said and walk out of his office.

Just then I suddenly I felt a sharp pain in my abdomen, I rush to the elevator button and press it repeatedly.

The elevator door open and I staggered in, I hold my tummy hard as I wince in pain

The pain become stronger and I don't know when I screamed.

“ Swan are you okay??” I heard Sullivan voice and groan in pain.

“ My baby”.

My body become sweaty and everywhere start circulating.

Everywhere become blur, the elevator door open and I was about fall when someone grab me tightly.

My body become weak, I could hear faint voice as darkness take over .

TBC

32

Sullivan pov

“ Swan....” I called and got no response

I hastily unbuckle the seat belt and get down from the car, I rush inside the law firm and the security guard stopped me

“ Your id card??” He asked and I tilt my neck to see a lady standing in front of an elevator

“ Please let me in, someone is dying inside” I shouted! And the people around glance at me

“ Leave here and stop saying gibberish" the man said and I point at the lady in front of the elevator holding Swan

He tilt his neck and I use that opportunity to jump over the machine glass door that's blocking my way, I rush to Swan side and tap her cheek

“ Swan!!!!”

“ Are you are her friend?” The lady asked and I glance back to see the security guards running to my side

“ Please help me, I wanna carry her”

I turn my back and the lady gently wrap Swan hands round my neck and I carry her up, I piggyback her out of the building and gently drop her in the car, in the back seat

“ Please don't die, I'm not ready to face Vinci wrath” I muttered as I close the car door and enter the driver seat

I ignite the car engine and start driving heading straight to the hospital, I dial Garam line and she pick the call

“ Sullivan...” she called

“ Where are you??”

“ Hospital, why is your voice shaking?” She asked and I breath out

“ Swan, I think she's unconscious right now”

“ Bring over to the hospital, you will meet me outside with a stretcher” She said and cut the call

I increase my speed and glance back to see her eyes closed

“ Swan please don't die, I don't wanna face his wrath, not now”
I muttered

Soon I reach the hospital and park the car crazily, I get down from the car and rush to the back seat, I open the car door and carry her

I gently drop her on the stretcher and watch as Garam and some nurses rush her in, I lock the car door and followed them in

They entered an emergency room and I was about to enter when Garam stopped me

“ Sullivan you can't enter emergency room” Garam said and I slap my forehead

“ Why??”

“ Just stay here she's gonna be fine and moreover what happen?” she asked

“ I think the baby is hitting her cause she was screaming in pain and by the time I reach where she was, she already fainted”

“ The baby??” She asked and I nod

“ I just hope nothing happen to her and the baby cause if anything go wrong, Vinci is definitely gonna kill me”

“ She's gonna be fine, Swan is strong so put your mind at rest”
Garam said and I nod

We waited for one hour before the doctor step out from the emergency room

“ Lincoln how's she?” Garam asked and the man glance at me

“ She's okay now, do you know she's pregnant”

“ Yeah Lincoln I know that” Garam replied

“ The babies is okay, They were just playing around” He said
and I sigh heavily

“ Wait they??”

“ It's not one baby, it's two babies” Lincoln said and I glance at
Garam

“ You mean twins” Garam said and he nod

“ Can we see her now??” I asked and he glance Garam

“ We're together” Garam said and he nod

“ Sure let's go”

Swan pov

I could hear some voice as I slowly open my eyes, I glance around to see myself on the hospital bed

“ What am I doing here?”

“ Swan you fainted” Sullivan replied and I breathe out closing my eyes

I sit upright then open my eyes, I glance at everyone that's in the room

“ My baby...”

“ They are doing pretty good” A man in a white lab coat replied

“ You say what?”

“ Your babies are doing well so no cause for alarm” Another man said and I glance at Sullivan

“ Your carrying two babies in your small tummy” Sullivan said and I touch my tummy

“ You mean twins” I muttered and they nod

“ Thank you”

I get off the bed and Garam rush to my side, “ You need to rest” she muttered

“ I'm fine don't worry”

“ Are you feeling any pains?” The doctor asked and I twitch my lip

“ No I'm not” I replied

“ If you are feeling any pains, just don't take any drug cause it might affect the babies” the other man said and I nod

“ Can I go home?”

“ Sure but you need to rest” The doctor as I nod

“ What about the hospital bill?”

“ Your friend have taken care of it” The doctor replied and I sigh

“ Please keep this a secret from my family, if they can know about it trust me I will hold you responsible for it” I said and stood then walk out of the room adjusting my dress

“ Swan you need to rest” Sullivan said and I glance at him

“ Don't worry I'm gonna be fine”

He give me my hand bag and we wait for Garam to step out

“ Don't worry about getting Karina's phone, I will try to hack it” Sullivan said

“ Let me try to get it and if I can't get it then you can hack it”

“ Swan you need to rest, your babies, I don't wanna face Vinci wrath” Sullivan said and I chuckled

“ Nothing is gonna happen to you just let me do it”

Garam finally step out from the room with those two men

“ Swan....” She called

“ Thank you for the treatment, I will call you later” I said as I bow at them then walk away with Sullivan

“ What about Yiga?” He asked

“ Let her stay with Haeun till around 7pm”

“ I will relay your message to her” Sullivan said and I nod

We step out of the hospital and enter the car, he ignite the car engine and start driving

“ How're you feeling now?” He asked and I smiled

“ Sullivan I'm okay so stop getting worried” I replied smiling

“ Okay if you say so.....”

“ And if you find anything suspicious on her phone, just snap and send it to me” He added and I nod

“ I will do that when I reach home”

Shortly, he arrive in front of the white Mansion and I get down from the car holding my bag, I wave at him and watch as he drive away

I enter the Mansion and saw some guards in the compound

They all bow at me and I walk away heading to the other building, the guards in front of the other building stopped me

“ Ma'am you're not allowed to go in” The security guard said and I nod

“ When did you start obeying my Dad's rule, will you let me in now or I land you in trouble”

“ Ma'am..." He called

“ Swan what are you doing here” I heard a familiar voice and that voice send a strong shiver to my veins

I tilt my heels around to see my Dad staring at me with his guards standing behind him

“ I think I said something right now”

“ Well, I'm here to talk to that darn assassin that made life miserable for me” I said coldly and he smiled glancing around

“ We need to talk” He muttered and walk away heading inside

I face the guard that's the building “ Swrs you will pay for this” I muttered and walk away following my Dad

We entered the main building and I was welcomed with a slap

He hit my face within a sec and I hold my cheek in pain as I stare at him

The maids around gasp loudly and I slowly move eyes around and saw Karina standing on the stairs smiling

“ You hit my face”

He slap my face again ” What's the meaning of that rubbish you displayed on the news” He shouted!

Karina rush to his side and hold his hand, she face me “ Sweetie don't let this girl ruin your day” Karina said and I scoff

“ Now you are acting like a saint, why are you a chameleon”

“ Swan shut up!” He growled! And I take my lip in

“ You hit my face because of Juran, Dad I hate you for this”

“ I don't wanna see you near that building and,,, don't think I buy your lie” He said coldly and walk away with Karina

“ Darn sh**t" I cursed beneath my breathe

Karina glance at me and smirk “ You're a fool” I read her lip and scoff

Now she think she's winning

I walk away heading upstairs, I touch the door knob and was about to open my room door when something cross my mind

Her phone

When Karina came downstairs, her hands were empty which means her phone is in her room

I walk over to her room door and enter her room, I lock the door and glance around to see her phone on the bed

The phone is unlocked and I smiled, I take her and go through her call logs, I bring out my phone and video her call logs then move to message and saw something interesting.

I hastily stop the video and snap her chat, I snapped every suspicious thing then clear the search history and return the phone to its normal position, I take my phone and hide it inside my bag before heading to the door,,,, I unlock the door and the door opens revealing Ethel's face

He stares at me with zero expression and I flip my eyelashes acting innocent

“ What are you doing in my Mom's room?” He asked

“ I was looking for something”

“ What are you looking for?” He asked as he tilts his neck glancing around

“ That's none of your business”

“ I guess the slap that Dad gave you is yet to reset your manners” Ethel said and I scoff

“ Mind your business”

“ Juran career is over now, I'm sure you are happy about it” He said

“ Not yet, I'm not satisfied with the result I'm seeing” I said and step out from the room

“ The board members doesn't want me in the company, I'm sure it's your handiwork” Ethel said

“ I gat no time for you and I don't care if the board members want me or not”

“ She should have end your life properly, I don't know why that foolish woman gave birth to you” Ethel said and I turn around angrily and grab his shirt

“ Don't you dare speak ill about my mom”

“ Do you wanna beat me or are you planning to end my life through the internet too” He said smiling.

“ This smile won't ever appear on your face again cause scumbag like you don't deserve to live

Advertisement

mark my words” I said as I let go of his shirt and walk away

I enter my room and lock the door, I drop my bag on the bed and touch my cheek

First time he's ever gonna hit my face and this is gonna be the last time he's going to hit my face

I bring out my phone and send the videos and pictures to Vinci's phone

After sending it, I forward everything to Sullivan through Vinci's phone then delete it from my phone

“ Is it relevant” I sent and got no reply

His phone start ringing and I pick the call immediately

“ I have seen it” Sullivan said and I nod

“ Please work it on very well”

“ Trust me on this” He said

“ How's Haeun?”

“ She's playing with Yiga” He replied

“ Thank you”

” Your voice is different” Sullivan said and I chuckled

“ He hit my face but don't worry I'm fine now”

“ Swan....” He called

“ Sullivan I don't wanna tell you this cause I know you will be worried”

“ Swan I have to be worried, you and your babies safety matters a lot to the Shadow's team” He said and I chuckled

“ Thank you”

“ Don't stress yourself, take a good rest” He said and I made the mmm sound

I cut the call and drop the phone on the bed and take my phone, I dial her line and she pick up immediately

“ Evita I need your help”

“ Swan what's it?” She asked

“ I want you to arrest Aldo and Beaver for attempted murder”

“ We're already on the case and as we're talking right now, they are in the interrogation room” She said and I widened my eyes

“ So fast”

“ Netizen are protesting, they want us to arrest them and again the evidence you revealed was pretty strong” Evita said

“ Do I need to come??”

” Yeah you need to come but that will be tomorrow” She replied

“ Don't let them cover the case up” I said

“ Trust me Swan” She said and I cut the call

I take the phones and drop it in the drawer then lay on the bed, I glance at the door and the key is there

They can't enter even if they use their darn master key

I lay on the bed and massage my tummy, “ My dear King and Queen, I planned on telling your dad about your existences but the devil did not allow me to do so” I muttered as I close my eyes and sleep soundly

*** FIVE DAYS LATER ***

The sound of a female heels can be heard as she enter her room and take off her coat left alone with a black fitted skirt and a pink shirt

She wear her pink bedroom slippers and open her bag, she bring out her phone and make a phone call

“ Let's start” She said.

“ Swan I'm sending the evidences to you, forward it to your detective friend”

“ Sullivan what about the press?” Swan asked

“ I have taken care of that part and how was it?”

“ You mean the court?” She asked

“ Yes, what's their punishment?”

“ The judge sentence Aldo and Beaver to ten years imprisonment for attempted murder deliberately” Swan replied

“ That serve them right, Karina and those men are the next”
Sullivan said

“ Send the evidences to me right now” Swan said as she cut the
call

Her phone made a sound and she saw a video clip and pictures
from Sullivan

She forward everything to Evita then call her immediately, she
pick the call

“ Have you seen it?” Swan asked

“ I have seen it, I will show my boss and we're gonna swing into
action” Evita said and Swan cut the call

Time for the show, Time to go and save my charming prince

In the other building, the guards stood holding guns as they
watch over Vinci

“ Time is ticking” Vinci muttered as he glance around

“ Like I know this plan is gonna work” He muttered as he smirk
He heard the sound of the door opening and his eyes to the
door

A smile appear on his face when the door open revealing Swan
face

“ My Queen is here” Vinci said aloud and the guards glance at
him

“ Release him” Swan said

“ Ma'am we're following the governor's order”

“ Governor's order, someone that's going to jail very soon”
Swan said as she scoff and the guards glance at each other

“ Ma'am....”

“ Release him right now or I'm gonna use force” Swan said and the one of the guards reluctantly unlock the chain that's tying Vinci down

He unlock the chain from him then move away, Swan take a step forward and stretch out her hand

Vinci smiled as he rest his hand on her hand and stand upright, he glance at the guards then pull Swan closer to himself

“ May we never see each other again” He muttered and walk out of the torture room with Swan

Immediately they step out of the building, Vinci hug her and kiss her forehead

“ How's my babies fairing?”

“ They miss their daddy” Swan replied smiling

“ They miss me or you miss me??” Vinci said as he smirk

“ They miss you and I miss you too, I miss your juicy lip and body” Swan said as she wink at him and he chuckled

“ Someone is getting naughty” Vinci said

“ So you don't miss me” Swan said as she frown at him

“ I miss you, your smile, beautiful face, juicy lip and moans, I love the way you moan my name anytime I go deeper” Vinci said and Swan laughed

“ You're naughty” He smiled as he kiss her lip deeply then kiss her forehead

“ Let's go end things so we can go and eat each other up” Vinci said and Swan smiled biting her lower lip

Swan pov

I smiled as I enter the living room and the smile slowly fade away when I saw those vipers on the dining table

My Dad manage to clear Juran sex tape but I will make sure I deal with him and Karina then see how Juran and Ethel are gonna feel

“ Family over here”

“ Lunatic just take a break” Juran said

“ You wanna cause another havoc” Ethel said

“ Sweetie are you not eating?” Karina asked as she give me that fake smile

“ Darling are you okay?” Dad asked and I scoff

“ Just come over to the living room” I said as I glance around

There's a guard in the living room standing close to the TV while the maids stood at the back of the dining room watching those vipers

I watch as they move to the living room and I exhale deeply

“ What do you want?” Juran asked as she stare at me hatefully

“ I just have a little surprise for you all”

“ What's the damn surprise?” Ethel asked and I smiled

“ Vinci come in”

Their eyes move to the door and they widened it when they saw Vinci

He entered the living room and I smiled “ Who release this bastard!!!” Dad shouted!

“ I released him”

“ Why will you release a criminal” Ethel half yelled as he stare at Vinci hatefully

“ Firstly my man he's not a criminal....”

“ What did you just call him” Dad said as he cut me off

“ He's my man and right now I'm carrying his babies”

“ Swan you're pregnant for a dangerous assassin” Ethel shouted and I rolled my eyeballs

“ Mr governor I'm so happy to meet you again in your house, main building,,,, Remember I said I'm gonna make you a grandpa and now I think I have successfully make a grandpa,,,,,And Karina stop acting like a saint or have you forgotten you sent me to kill Swan, you and jealous kids sent me to kill Swan and now this small ant have the right to call me a dangerous assassin” Vinci said and my Dad face Karina

“ Honey trust me it's not true he's lying" Karina said

I love this face I'm looking at, there's fear written all over Karina's face

“ She forgot to tell you that Juran and Ethel are not your biological children” Vinci said and Juran screamed

“ Shut up” Juran yelled!

“ I'm not done yet, Mr governor a professional pedophile that enjoys using scholarship to have s£x with young girls, you killed Chaewon without feeling remorseful and now you wanna live a good life" Vinci said

“ Dad I have every evidence on what did and right now, Assemblyman Lee, Senator Jung and Choi Jin should be in the prosecutor office answering hot question”

“ They are coming for you guys so don't think of escaping cause you're all over the internet”

Ethel hastily turn on the TV and they saw Juran face on the TV, Karina slowly fall on the floor as she screamed

Dad growled and Ethel screamed, Juran move closer to the TV and break down in tears

“ Don't worry I will try and visit you in prison” Vinci said

“ Baby let's go” I said as I hold his arm and we turn around

We were about to take a step when we heard something

“ You think you can ruin my life and go scot free” I heard Juran voice and we turn around to see her holding a gun

The guard standing next to the TV try to snatch the gun from her and Juran shoot him in his forehead .

I screamed and Vinci hug me, he stroke my hair gently and I exhale heavily

“ See I'm not joking, I'm gonna kill one of you here” Juran whispered

“ Shoot, I'm not gonna stop you” Vinci said and I glance at him

“ Juran don't shoot”

“ Sweetie drop the gun” Karina said

“ Juran drop the gun" Ethel said

“ Baby we can talk this out" Dad said

“ Who should I shoot first” Juran said as she slowly point the gun at me

“ Why are you holding the gun like an amateur" Vinci said as he take a step forward

“ Don't come closer or I will shoot your forehead for real” Juran shouted!

“ Like I said shoot but just know that you're gonna spend the rest of your life in prison” Vinci said

“ I'm already on a death row for killing this man so killing another person won't change the punishment I'm gonna receive" Juran as she pull the trigger pointing the gun at me

Immediately I felt someone hugging me tightly as I heard a loud gun shot

Vinci hold my waist and I slowly move my hand to his back, my hand touch something thick and I don't know when I fall on the floor, my eyes move to hand and I saw blood on it

“ Drop the gun, hands up” I heard an unfamiliar voice and slowly glance at the door, the police men rushed in with ammunition

I face Vinci back as I hold his cheek, he smiled at me and I glance at my hand, it's soaked with blood

“ Vinci...” I break down in tears

“ I'm so happy to have you in my life, your existence means a lot to me” He said lowly

“ Why did you take the bullet” I shouted as hot tears roll my cheek

“ I don't want you to die, I want Haeun to feel mother love that she have never felt in her life” He said lowly and I hug him tightly as I sob loudly

“ Don't talk anymore, save your breathe, let's save you first”

“ Swan promise me you're gonna take good care of Haeun and the unborn babies” Vinci said and I face him

“ Stop talking like a dead man”

” I love you” He said and I nod sobbing loud

He hold my hand and kiss the ring that's on my finger

“ Swan...” He called lowly

“ I love you too so please save your breathe”

He nod as he close his eyes and his hand slowly drop down from my waist

“ Vinci..” I called as I sob loudly but got no response

His eyes slowly close and my bloody hand touch his cheek

“ Open your eyes you're scaring me”

“ Swan....” I heard a familiar voice and I tilt my neck to see Evita

“ Evita he's not talking and his eyes are closed, what's wrong?”

She bend down as she move her hand to his nose then glance at me

“ Swan it's like he's not breathing” She drop the bomb and my heart sink down in my tummy

“ Call the ambulance”

“ This is a dream cause this can't be true, he promise to stay by my side” I said lowly as another hot tears start rolling down my cheek

“ Swan....”

“ Evita help me to wake him up” I said with tears rolling down non-stop

“ He can't die like this” I muttered as I hug him tightly soaking my clothe and hand with blood

“ Swan I don't think he's breathing”

33 (Finale)

Swan sit on the chair as she cry her eyes waiting for the doctor to come out from the emergency room

“ Swan stop crying he's gonna be fine” Yiga said and she glance at her

“ He's gonna be fine and yet he's inside that emergency room for over one hour” Swan said

“ Nothing is gonna happen to him” Garam said and she just nod

“ Vinci please don't die”

“ Please stay with me”

“ Don't leave me alone with this babies”

“ We have a lot of things to do together so don't leave first”

This are the words that's running through her mind

The emergency room door slowly open and a doctor step out

Swan stood and rush to his side “ How's he??”

“ Actually we tried our best” The doctor said

“ What happened?”

“ We lost him” that word start ringing in her ear and she screamed

“ He can't die, let me go and wake him up” Swan said as hot tears roll down her cheek

Yiga rush to her side and pull her backward before she could enter the emergency room

“ Swan...”

“ Let me go and see him” She said as she screamed

Garam and Sullivan rush to her side and stroke her back

“ Swan you have to be strong your babies” Garam said

“ Remember your condition” Sullivan said and Swan just sob silently as his image rush in a like a water

His smile, his angry face, his dimples, his baby attitude

Her body could not accept the situation that have she to stand and face them

“ Take me to his house, the Mansion” Swan said as she walk away heading outside

Sullivan and Yiga followed her immediately carrying Haeun

They got outside and Swan enter the backseat, she stare at the window as tears roll her cheek

She touch her tummy and sob silently as his images keep rushing in

“ The first Mansion” Swan said and Sullivan start driving

Her eyes move to her ring and she touch the shining diamond ring

“ You promise to marry me” She muttered

“ You promise to stay by my side” She muttered

Her eyes move from to Haeun and she saw her staring at her

“ Haeun...” Swan called lowly and Haeun widen her arm

Swan carried her and sob on her shoulder, “ You're gonna be with me, we're gonna be together forever” She muttered

Soon Sullivan reach the Mansion and he gently park the car near the power bike

She get down from the car with Haeun and enter the building

A smile appear on her face she glance around, she remember the couch where they share their first kiss together

Her eyes move to the dark room door, the room where he tortured and rape her

The house is filled with his memories, her eyes move her eyes to the kitchen and she remember when he asked her cook and he called her Boobs unripe fruit

She sit on the couch with Haeun as she stare at the TV, she remember him standing there when he was telling her his sister's story

“ Swan your Dad, Juran, Ethel and Karina are in the prosecutor office right now" Yiga said and Swan just nod even tho her mind have travel somewhere else

“ He wants a tech company” Swan said, Sullivan and Yiga glanced at each other looking confused

“ Who are you talking about?” Yiga asked

“ Vinci want a tech company, he promise to get married to me”
Swan said as tears roll down

“ Swan...”

“ This house is filled with our memories, he can't possibly leave me with three kids, is he expecting me to live without him”
Swan said

“ Swan should I erase your memory?” Sullivan asked

“ Don't touch my memory” Swan said as she stood and went upstairs with Haeun

Sullivan sit on the couch and sigh heavily “ Does he really have to die now”

“ I wonder how she's gonna cope” Yiga said

“ She's gonna be fine” Sullivan said

“ I have seen like this, she look miserable and her eyes are big cause she have cry too much” Yiga said

“ Will you go and stay with her?” Sullivan asked

“ Let's give her some space and in the meantime let's prepare something for her” Yiga replied

“ She need to eat so she can regain her lost strength” Sullivan said

Swan enter the room and gently lay Haeun on the bed as she sit on the floor and cry her eyes out

The room remind her of him, their hot make out session and argument

She remember she commanded him to avoid Thelma for a whole day

“ He's so sweet” She muttered

Swan heard a loud cry and she lift her head to see Haeun crying

“ Baby what's wrong?? Are you hungry??” Swan asked as she stretch and carry her

She stroke her hair and she stop crying, Swan made her stand her hold her waist

Haeun made her raise her head and clean her tears, she giggled and Swan laughed

“ You're just like your Dad” Swan said and she laughed

Swan clean her eyes and smiled at her, Haeun touch Swan hair and bring her nose closer to Swan hair

She giggled and run away from Swan, “ You want me to chase you” Swan said and she nod smiling

“ Papa” Haeun said and Swan face become dull

“ She miss her Dad” Swan muttered

Haeun run to Swan side and hug her, Swan carried her as they walk out of the room

She went downstairs and saw no one there, she went to the kitchen and saw Sullivan with Yiga cooking

“ Sorry for the interruption, I need my phone” Swan said and Yiga point at her jeans pocket

Swan walk over to her side and bring out her phone from her pocket

“ Thank you and Sullivan where's Vinci phone?” Swan asked

“ It's with Yiga” Sullivan replied

“ Check my pocket” Yiga said and Swan check her other pocket and bring out Vinci

She take the phone and walk out of the kitchen with Haeun, she went upstairs and sit on the bed

Swan lay on the bed and Haeun sit on her back, she switch on the phone and go straight to gallery

A video caught her attention and she played it, a video of her sleeping as Vinci caress her cheek

She smiled as she watch the video and listen to his voice

“ He can't just die like that”

“ Vinci can't leave me alone”

“ This is just a dream”

“ I don't wanna accept this” Swan muttered and she doesn't know when she start crying again

Haeun take the phone from her hand and play the video smiling

Swan rest her head on the pillow and cry her eyes out

She close her eyes but open it back immediately when she heard a knock

She tilt her neck to see Sullivan holding a tray of food, she sit upright then glance at Haeun who's playing with the phone

“ You need for the sake of the baby” Sullivan said

“ I don't wanna eat, I'm not hungry" Swan said as she lay on the bed and back him

“ Swan you need to eat” Sullivan said and Swan close her eyes ignoring him

“ I don't wanna eat so give it to Haeun” Swan said

“ Swan.....” Sullivan called

“ Vinci died in my arm and you want me to eat, Are you not a human” Swan shouted! And Sullivan exhaled deeply

“ Do you wanna kill yourself” Sullivan said and Swan sit upright

“ If I have the opportunity to do that" Swan said

“ Okay kill yourself but know that you're gonna be a murderer if you kill yourself remember you are carrying his child" Sullivan said and she sob silently

“ He can't just die like that”

“ I know how you're feeling” Sullivan said as he drop the tray of food on the glass table and walk over to bed side and hug her

“ Everything is gonna be fine” Sullivan said as he stroke her back

“ The babies are gonna grow up without a father” .

“ That's why you have to be strong” Sullivan said

“ How's Juran and others?”

“ Prosecutor office” Sullivan replied

“ How's the netizen reacting to it?”

“ They are surprised, Assemblyman Lee, Senator Jung and Choi Jin are in the prosecutor office too” Sullivan replied and she sigh

“ We have finally prevail justice for Chaewon and right now we're suppose to be celebrate but instead we were given a sad news”

“ You made his mission successfully so don't back down”
Sullivan said

“ Thank you” Swan said and Sullivan made her rest her head on the pillow and he use the duvet to cover her body

Haeun rest her head on the bed and shoot out her small butt as she go through Vinci's phone

“ Don't cry” Sullivan said

“ I will try not to”

**** ONE YEAR LATER ****

In a big big room, a shirtless man with tattoo all over his body sit at the window as he stare at a picture that's on his hand

“ She keep getting beautiful daily” He muttered

“ I really can't wait to meet you” He muttered

The door open and he did not move an inch, a lady wearing a black palazzo pant with a white shirt tucked in wearing a black heel enter the room

“ Are you really gonna keep staring at her picture” the lady said

“ Thelma is the car?”

“ The car is ready so now don't avoid my question” Thelma said

“ I'm gonna keep staring at her picture cause I love her”

“ Why don't you go and meet your secret crush or should I say your baby mama" Thelma said and the man glance at her

He stood and wear his shirt, the leave the two buttons unbuttoned

“ Where's Garam?”

“ Don't ask me" Thelma said and walk out of the room

He wear his expensive wrist watch and check himself out in the mirror

He smiled as he touch his smooth neck “ I'm so happy it was successful” he muttered

He walk out of the room and step out of the house to see Thelma outside resting on a white car

“ We are going out”

“ You have finally succeed in turning me into your driver”
Thelma said and he rolled his eyeballs

“ I just wanna see my family”

“ Are you gonna see her or you're gonna stalk her which one”
Thelma said

“ Someone need to tame your mouth”

“ Shush and enter the car” Thelma said as she enter the driver
seat and he enter the car

He wear his seatbelt and she drive out of the compound

“ How's your health now?” Thelma asked

“ Are you worried about me or what”

“ Shut up and answer my question” Thelma said

“ Do I look sick, I'm healthy now so stop getting worried”

“ I was not worried about you” Thelma said

“ Stop lying”

“ Are you sure you're okay now?” she asked and he glance at her

“ The thyroid cancer is now I can eat different kind of food without getting scared of dying”

“ Garam really tried” Thelma said

“ Whatever”

“ Do you really have to spend one year in the state” Thelma said

“ The doctors were checking if the illness was gonna come back or not”

“ I'm glad you're okay” Thelma blurted out

“ Finally you're admitting it”

“ Shut up” She muttered and he laughed

Swan pov

The loud cry forced me to open my eyes

Advertisement

I slowly open it and saw Michael and Michaela crying as Haeun stroke their curly hair

“ Baby...” I called as sit upright and yawn

“ Momma” she called lowly as she point at the babies

“ What did I teach you to say to people early in morning”

“ Greeting” She said lowly as she cover her face

“ Do it properly”

“ Momma gudu morning” She said as she bow, her words are not clear but I already understand what she's trying to say

“ Good girl, how was your night?” I asked and she nod

“ Where's Yiga?”

She point at the door and I nod “ Go and call her, remember to call her with respect” I said and she run out of the room smiling

I face my beautiful babies, they stare at me as they suck their hand, I hop off the bed and walk to the dressing room,,,,,I enter the room and bring out a matching clothe and drop it on the bed

They resemble Vinci a lot and I can't just stopping think about him, I close heart for men and his ring is still on my finger

Assemblyman, my Dad Lee Senator Jung and Choi Jin are cooling their as\$ in the prison and now I get to live a normal life

I visit my Dad, Juran and Karina thrice in a month but none seems to welcome and I don't care about that

The room door and my eyes move to the door, I saw Yiga and Sullivan

They enter the room fully and Haeun rush in, she run to my side and hug me

“ Papa...” She muttered loudly and I glance at Sullivan and Yiga

“ Haeun you need to have your bath” Yiga said

I take my phone that's on the lamp stand and switch it on, I show her his picture and she smiled as she move away

She climb the bed and show the babies the picture

“ You keep showing her the picture” Sullivan said

“ Let her have a picture of how her father look like, I don't want her to forget his face easily”

“ She look happy, we can't tell her that her father is in the other world” Yiga said

“ She's just two so I can't tell her yet”

“ The both of you have mother and daughter connection”
Sullivan said

“ Haeun love her” Yiga said

“ Old school girl” Sullivan said

“ Hey!!” she shouted!

“ Don't destroy my ear drum, Swan someone is coming over to see you” Sullivan said

“ Who???”

“ A client that love the male dress that you designed” Sullivan replied

“ When is the client coming?”

“ Right now so get prepared” Sullivan replied as he walk out of the room

I look around as I take my lip, I enter the washroom and have a quick bath

After I bathing, I step out of the washroom tying a towel round my body

Yiga enter the washroom carrying the twins and Haeun followed her

I bring out a red gown from my wardrobe with a matching red undies, I wear my clothe and the zip become stiff

“ Yiga...” I called

“ Do you need anything?” she asked

“ My zip”

“ Swan your Boobs is big so don't expect the zip to go freely”
she heard Yiga voice and chuckled

She pack her in a ponytail and apply a little make-up on her
face

Few minutes later, Yiga step out of the bathroom crying the
twins and Haeun step out tying a towel round her small body

I take Michaela from her and dress her up, I wear her a black
joggers with a matching black cardigan, I apply baby powder on
her face and she giggled

“ Cutie, Haeun you look like Michaela”

Haeun run to my side and touch her cheek, I smiled

“ Momma” she said smiling

Yiga dress Michael and after she's done with that, she's dress
for Haeun and we walk out of the room

I carry Michaela and Haeun hold my right hand, my left hand hold Michaela firmly as she rest her head on my shoulder

We got downstairs and I saw a man backing me, he look like a Vinci, he have the same height with Vinci

“ Vinci....”

The man slowly turn around and tear roll down my cheek when I see his face

Sullivan collect Michaela from my hand and I take a step forward

“ You're alive and you made me suffer emotionally”

Tears roll down my cheek “ I'm sorry, the treatment took longer than I thought" Vinci said and I hug him tightly as I sob on his shoulder

He stroke my hair and I hug him tightly “ I miss you”

“ I love you" He said and I disengage from the hug

“ How's your health now, the lump is gone”

“ I'm perfectly okay" He said and I hug him again

He kiss my cheek then move his lip to my lip as he devour it deeply

I hold his shirt as I kiss his lip while crying, swerz I miss this lip

“ Do you guys really have to kiss I'm front of this innocent babies" I heard Thelma voice and broke the kiss

“ Sorry who just talked now, Vinci when did your dog start talking”

“ Hey!!! Are you comparing me to a dog” Thelma shouted!

“ You look like one so I was appreciating your beauty”

“ Vinci I'm gonna kill your baby mama" Thelma said

“ I'm his fiancé not his baby mama, why are your brains so dull”

“ Hey!!!” she half yelled and I snuck my tongue at her

“ I'm the one that saved Vinci so show me some respect”

Thelma said

“ You're not a god”

She fume in anger and I smiled as I hug Vinci tightly

“ I miss you badly” He said and I smiled

“ Your kids miss you, Michael and Michaela” I said and he smiled

“ They take after you” He said as he stare at them

“ Papa...” Haeun called and Vinci carried her

“ Did I miss anything?” I heard Garam voice and I tilt my neck to see her coming over to our direction

“ Swan we have a score to settle” Thelma said

“ I know that, bring it on”

“ You guys are always fighting” Garam said and Thelma glance at me

“ Let's beat her up” Thelma said

“ Instead of beating her let's just kill her”

“ I can't be a witness in the court room” Yiga said as she walk out carrying Michael

“ I'm bad at spelling and I can only hack and not talk” Sullivan said as he walk out carrying Michaela

“ Garam don't worry I will get the best coffin for you, I will do a benefitting funeral for you” Vinci said as he walk out carrying Haeun

“ Hey why are all of you leaving” Garam said

“ Swan cut off her head” Thelma said

“ Let's start from her lip that's always interrupting our moment”
I said and we mount on her

They both jump on Garam and land on the floor laughing

THE END